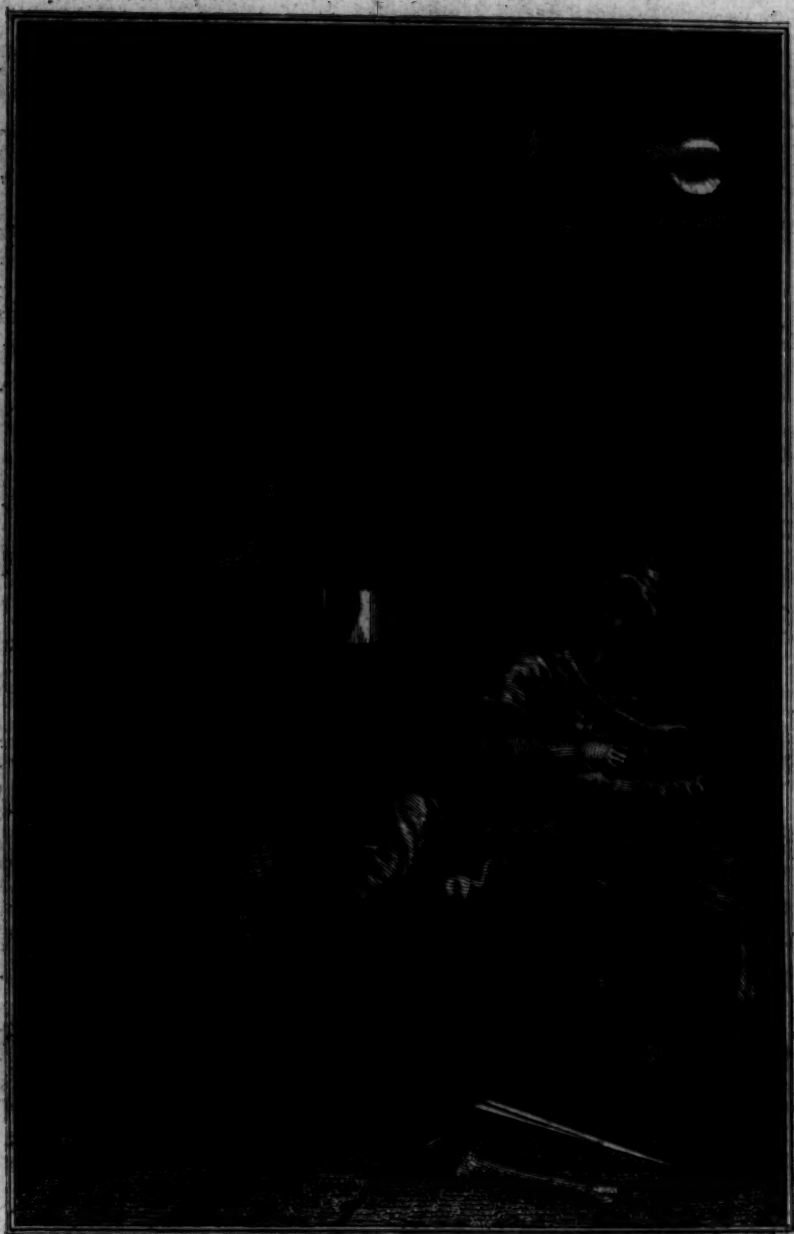


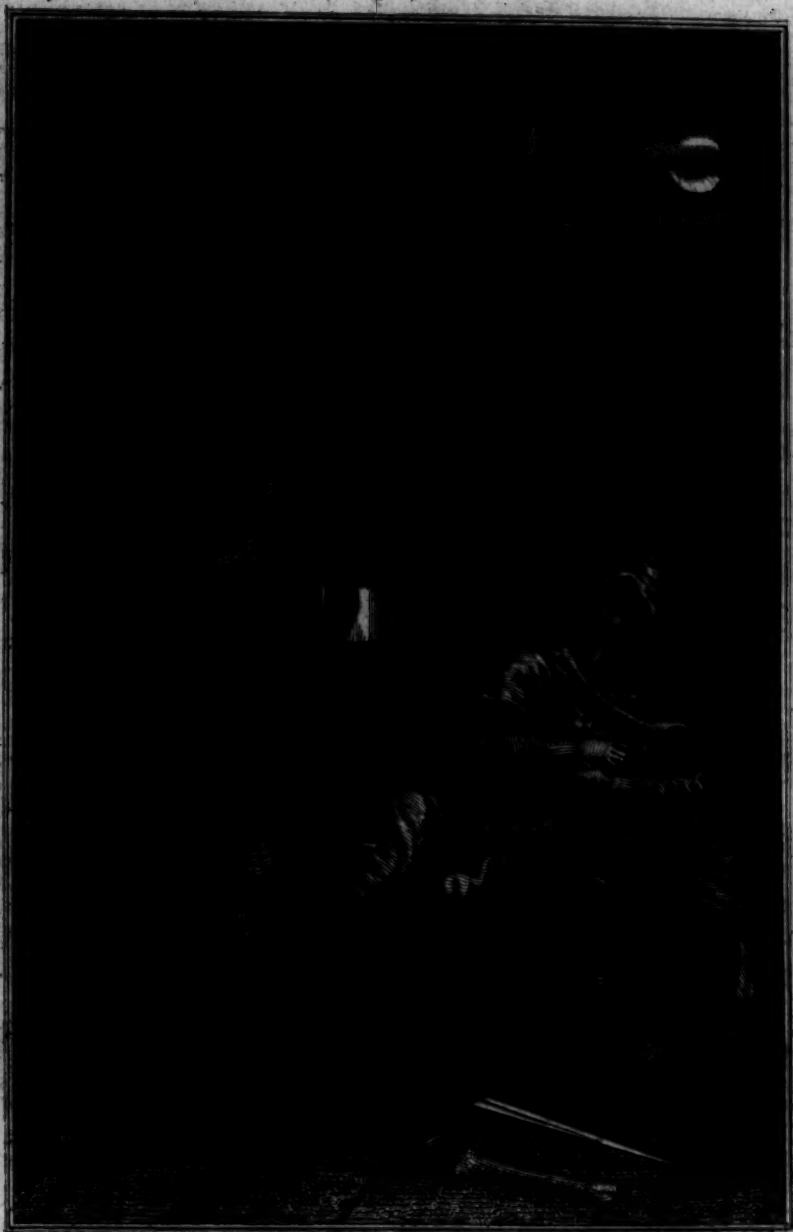


Drawn by A. Chase

From *Night's Adventure* Book

Page 17

The knight ran hastily to her, and so did Don Diego,
and found she was delivered of a beautiful boy.



Drawn by A. C. C. C.

From *Night's Adventure* Book

Page 10

The knight ran hastily to her, and so did Don Diego,
and found she was delivered of a beautiful boy.

304
Gal 6 Rb

THE
WORKS
OF
DON FRANCISCO DE QUEVEDO.

TRANSLATED FROM THE SPANISH.
IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. III.

CONTAINING

THE LIFE OF PAUL THE SPA-
NISH SHARPER—BOOK II.
FORTUNE IN HER WITS.
PROCLAMATION BY OLD FA-
THER TIME.

A TREATISE OF ALL THINGS
WHATSOEVER; PAST, PRE-
SENT, AND TO COME.
LETTERS ON SEVERAL OCCA-
SIONS.

Illustrated with Beautiful Engravings.

EDINBURGH:

PRINTED FOR MUNDELL & SON; J. MUNDELL, COLLEGE, GLASGOW;
AND J. WRIGHT, LONDON.

1798.

W O R L D

TO THE EDITOR OF THE

IN THE

RECEIVED OF THE
OFFICE OF THE
RECORDS AND
GENERAL INVESTIGATION
UNIT
JAN 10 1964

of life, and I listening carefully to his advice.
 He, an hour after, in came a physician
 clad in a black robe, and a long white
 pate that a lion would not lick upon it; they

OF THE
LIFE AND ACTIONS

PAUL

THE SPANISH SHARPER,
The Pattern of Rogues, and Mirror of Vagabonds.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

What happened to me at my first coming to Madrid, until
 Night.

WE got to Madrid at ten o'clock in the morn-
 ing, and went lovingly together by consent to
 the house where Don Toribio's friends lived.
 A very old woman miserably clad opened the
 door, he inquired for his friends, and she answer-
 ed, they were gone out a-seeking. We conti-
 nued by ourselves until noon, diverting the time,

he encouraging me to follow the sponging course of life, and I listening carefully to his advice. Half an hour after twelve, in came a phantom clad in black baize down to his heels, and so bare, that a louse would not stick upon it; they talked to one another in cant, the result whereof was his embracing me, and offering his service. We discoursed awhile, and then he pulled out a glove, in which were sixteen royals, and a letter, by virtue of which he had collected that money, pretending it was a license to beg for a woman in distress. He took the money out of the glove, drew another to it out of his pocket, and folded them together as physicians do. I asked him, why he did not wear them? And he answered, because they were both for one hand, and that way they served as well as if they had been fellows. All this while I observed he did not let go his cloak, which was wrapped about him; and being but a novice, for my better information, took the liberty to inquire, why he still hugged himself up so close in his cloak? he replied, "My friend, there is a great rent down my back, made up with a patch of old stuff besides a great spot of oil; this piece of a cloak hides all, and thus I can appear abroad." At length he unwrapped himself, and under his cassock I perceived a

great bulk sticking out, which I took to have been trunk-breeches, for it looked like them, until he, going in to louse himself, tucked up his coats, and I perceived there were only two hoops of pasteboard tied to his waist, and joining to his thighs, which stuck out under his mourning, for he wore neither shirt nor breeches, but was so naked, that he had scarce any thing to loose. He went into the lousing room, and turned a little board that hung at the door, on which was written, "One is lousing," that no other might go in until he had done. I blessed God with all my heart, to see how he had provided for men, giving them ingenuity, if they wanted riches. "For my part," said my friend, "I am sick of the breeches with travelling, and therefore must withdraw to mend." He asked, whether there were any rags? The old woman, who gathered them twice a week about the streets, as the rag-women do for the paper mills, to cure the incurable diseases of those gentlemen, answered, there were none; and that Don Lorenzo Yniguez del Pedroso had kept his bed a fortnight for want of them, being sick of his coat. At this time in came one booted, in a travelling garb, a gray suit, and a hat bridled up on both sides. The others acquainted him who I was, and he saluted me

very lovingly, laid down his cloak; and it appeared, who would imagine it, that the fore part of his coat was of gray cloth, and the back of white linen, well liquored with sweat. I could not forbear laughing, and he very demurely said, "You'll come into our row, and then you won't laugh; I'll lay a wager you don't know why I wear my hat with the brims bridled up." I answered, "To look big, and remove all obstacles from your sight." "That's your mistake," said he, "I do it to hinder the fight; it is because I have no hatband, and this hides it." This said, he pulled out about twenty letters, and as many royals, saying, he could not deliver those. Every one was marked a royal postage, and they were all folded alike. He signed any name that came into his head; writ news of his own making, and delivered them in that habit to people of fashion, receiving the postage, which he practised once a month, all which to me was very amazing.

Next came two others, one of them with a cloth coat, reaching but half way down his wide kneed breeches, and a cloak of the same sort, with his band ruffled up to hide the rends in it. The wide breeches were of camblet, but only as far as appeared, for all the rest was of red baize. This man was jangling and brawling

with the other, who wore a ruff for want of a band, a hanging coat for want of a cloak, and went upon a crutch, with one leg bound up in rags and furs, because he had but one stocking. He pretended to be a soldier, and had been so, but a scurvy one, and by the privilege of a soldier intruded into any house. He in the coat and half breeches cried, "The one half, or at least a considerable part, is due to me; if you do not give it me, I vow to God." "Do not vow to God," replied the other, "for I am not lame at home, and if you prate, I'll lay this crutch about your ears." This threat inflamed both parties; they came to high words, and gave one another the lie; then falling to blows, the clothes in a moment flew all about in rags at the first handling. We parted them, and inquiring into the cause of the quarrel, the soldier cried, "Put tricks upon me! you shall not have the value of a cross. You must understand, gentlemen, that being at St. Saviour's Church, there came a child to this poor fellow, and asked him, whether I was the ensign John de Lorenzana? who answered, I was, because he saw he had something in his hand. With this, he brought the child to me, and calling me ensign, said, here, Sir, see what this child would have with you. I un-

"derstood the trick, and said, I was the man,
 "took his message, and with it a dozen of hand-
 "kerchiefs, returning an answer to his mother,
 "who sent them to some person of that name.
 "Now he demands half, and I'll be torn in
 "pieces before I'll part with them; my own
 "nose shall have the wearing of them all out."
 The cause was adjudged on his side, only he
 was forbid blowing his nose in them, and order-
 ed to deliver them up to the old woman, to
 make ruffles and hand-wrists, to appear in fight,
 and represent shirt-sleeves, for blowing the nose
 was absolutely prohibited. When night came,
 we all went to bed, and lay as close together as
 herrings in a barrel, or tools in a tweezer-case.
 As for supper, there was not so much as a
 thought of it; most of the gang never strip-
 ped, for they were naked enough to go to bed
 as they went all day.

CHAP. II.

The same Subject of the foregoing Chapter continued, with
 other strange Adventures.

DAY came, and we all roused, I was as well
 acquainted with them already, as if we had been

one mother's children; for there is ever an easiness and satisfaction in what is not good. It was very pleasant to see one put on his shirt at ten several times; because it consisted of as many several clouts, and say a prayer at every one; like a priest that is vesting to go to the altar. One could not find the way into his breeches; another called out for help to put on his doublet, for none of them knew the right side from the wrong, or the head from the heels. When this was over, which afforded no little pleasure, they all laid hold of their needles and thread, and darn, stitch, and patch. One fixed an arm against a wall, to draw together the rents in a sleeve; another knelt down, to botch up the holes in his hose; another clapped his head betwixt his legs, to come at a breach upon his buttocks. No Dutch landscape afforded such variety of strange figures as I saw there; they botched, and the old woman supplied them with materials, as rags and clouts of all the colours of the rainbow, which she had picked up on Saturday night.

When the mending time was over, as they called it, they all viewed one another narrowly, to see what was amiss, in order to go abroad a-shifting. I told them I would have them order my dress, for I designed to lay out the hun-

dred royals I had on a suit of clothes, and leave off my cassock. "That must not be," said they; "let the money be put into the common stock; we will clothe him immediately out of our wardrobe, and appoint him his walk in the town, where he alone shall range and seek out." I consented, deposited the money, and in a trice they made me a mourning cloth coat out of my cassock, cut my long cloak into a short one, and trucked the remains of it for an old hat new dressed, making a hatband very neatly of some cotton picked out of inkhorns. They took off my band and wide-kneed breeches, and instead of these, put me on a pair of close hose, lashed only before; for the sides and the back part were nothing but sheep-skins. The silk stockings they gave me were not half stockings, for they reached but four fingers below the knees, the rest being covered with a tight pair of boots over my own red hose. The band they gave me was all in rags, and when they had put it on, they said, "The band is somewhat decayed on the sides and behind; if any body looks at you, Sir, you must be sure to turn about as they do, like the sunflower, which still moves as he does. If there happen to be two at once observing you on both sides, fall back; and to prevent being

"observed behind, let your hat hang down on your neck, so that the brim may cover the band, leaving all your forehead bare; and if any body asks why you wear it so, tell him, it is because you dare show your face in any part of the world." Next they gave me a box, containing black and white thread, sewing silk, packthread, a needle, a thimble, bits of cloth, linen, and silk, with other shreds and scraps, and a knife. To my girdle they fastened a tinder-box, with a steel and flint in a little pouch, saying, "This box will carry you through the world, without the help of friends or relations; this contains all we stand in need of; take and keep it." They appointed the Ward of Saint Lewis for my walk, and so I entered upon my employment. We all went out together, but because I was a novice, they ordered him that brought and converted me to be my instructor in the trade of sharpening.

We set out very gravely, walking in state, with our beads in our hands, and made towards my precinct. We paid respect to all we met, taking off our hats to the men, though we had rather have taken their cloaks; to the women we bowed low, because they are fond of respect, and proud of being honoured. My worthy governor, as he went along, would say to one cre-

ditor, I shall receive money to-morrow; to another, Have patience for a day or two, the bankers put me off. One asked him for his cloak, another for his girdle; by which I perceived he was such a true friend to his friend, that he had nothing which was his own. We went in and out from one side of the street to the other, like drunken men, that find it too narrow for them, to avoid duns. Here one whipped out to demand his house-rent, there another the hire of his sword, presently a third the lent of his sheets and shirts; so that it appeared he was a hireling gentleman, like a hired horse. It happened he spied a man at a good distance, who, as he told me, was ready to tear him to pieces for a debt, but could not tear the money from him. To prevent being known by him, he let fall his long hair, which before was tucked up behind his ears, and looked like a shock dog that was never shorn. Then he elapped a patch upon one eye, and began to talk to me in Italian. He had time enough to do this before the other came up, who had not yet observed him. I declare it, I saw the man round and round him, as a dog does before he lies down; he blessed himself as if he had been bewitched, and went away, saying, "God bless me, I durst have sworn it had been he; what a mighty mistake

"I had like to commit; he who has lost oxen, always fancies he hears their bells." I was ready to burst with laughing to see what a figure my friend made; he stepped into a porch to tuck up his hair again, and pull off his patch, and said, "These are the dresses for denying of debts; learn my friend, for you will see a thousand such shifts in this town." We went on, and at the corner of a street took two slices of gingerbread, and as many drams of brandy, of a whore, who gave it us for nothing, after wishing my director welcome to town, who said, "This puts a man in a condition to make shift without a dinner for this day, for at worst he is sure of so much." It went to my very heart to think it was dubious whether we should have any dinner, and answered him very disconsolately in behalf of my stomach, to which he replied, "You are a man of a small faith, and repose little confidence in our mumping profession. God Almighty provides for the crows and jackdaws, and even for scriveners, and should he fail, poor Pinchguts? You have but a poor soul." "You are in the right," quoth I, "but still I fear I shall make it poorer, for the belly is the life of the soul."

As we were talking after this manner, a clock struck twelve, and being yet a stranger to that

profession, my guts took no notice of the gingerbread, but I was as if I had eaten no such thing. Being thus put in mind again of that want, I turned to my conductor, and said, "My friend, this business of starving is very hard to be learned at first; I was used to feed like a farmer, and am now brought to fast like an anchorite." It is no wonder you are not hungry, who have been bred to it from your infancy, like king Mithridates with poison, so that it is now familiar and habitual to you. I do not perceive you take any diligent care to provide belly-timber, and therefore I am resolved to shift as well as I can." "God is my life," quoth he, "what a pleasant spark you are; it is but just now struck twelve, and are you in such a mighty haste already? Your stomach is very exact to its hours, and immediately cries out, Cupboard; but it must practise patience, and learn to be in arrears at times. What, would you be cramming all day? the very beasts can do no more. It does not appear in history that ever knight of our order was troubled with a looseness; but on the contrary, our commons are so short, that we scarce ever go to stool. I told you already, that God provides for all men; yet, if you are in such haste, I am going to receive

"the alms at the monastery of St. Jerome, where there are most delicious friars; there I will stuff my devil: If you will go along with me, well and good; if not, every one take his own course." "Farewell," said I, "my wants are not so small as to be satisfied with the leavings of others; every man shifts for himself."

My friend walked very upright, now and then looking upon his feet, and took out a few crumbs of bread, which he carried for that purpose in a little box, these he strewed about his beard and clothes, so that he looked as if he had dined. I coughed and hawked to conceal my weakness, wiping my whiskers, muffled up with my cloak upon the left shoulder, playing with my tens, for I had but ten beads upon my string. All that saw me believed I had dined, and had they thought the lice were then dining upon me, they had guessed right. All my confidence was in my crowns I had sunk, though I had a scruple of conscience, that it was against the rules of our profession to pay for a dinner, being obliged to feed upon the public; but I was resolved to break the fast, and transgress the ordinances. By this time I was come to the corner of St. Lewis's Street, where a pastry-cook lived. On the bulk lay a curious mutton pye,

delicately baked, and piping hot out of the oven; my nose stumpled at it, and I made a full set like a dog at a partridge, fixing my eyes, and gazing so stedfastly, that it shrunk up as if it had been blasted. It had been pleasant enough to know how many ways I cast about to steal it, and then again resolved to buy it. By this time it struck one, which put such a damp upon me, that I resolved to launch into the next cook's shop. As I was steering towards one, it pleased God that I met with a friend of mine, called the Licentiate Flechilla, who came swinging his cassock down the street, his face all dusty, and his long robes full of daglocks. As soon as he spied me, he ran to embrace me, and yet I wonder he should know me in that condition. I returned his embrace, he asked how I did? and I answered, "I have abundance of stories to tell you, Mr. Licentiate; all that troubles me, is, that I must be gone to-night. I am sorry for that," quoth he, "and were it not late, and that I am going in haste to dinner, I would stay with you; but a sister I have that is married, and her husband expects me. Is Mrs. Anne here?" said I, "whatever becomes of my business, I'll go and wait upon her; that is a duty I cannot dispense with." Hearing him say he had not dined, made me sharp:

Away I went with him, and by the way told him, that a wench he had been very fond of at Alcala was then in town, and I could get him admittance into her house. He was mightily pleased at this motion, for I purposely contrived to talk of such things as might be pleasing to him. This discourse held us till we came to his sister's house; in we went, I made very great tenders of service to both husband and wife, and they believing all I said was true, and that I might be out of countenance for coming at that time of day, began to excuse themselves, saying, They would have made some provision, had they thought of such a guest. I laid hold of the opportunity, and invited myself, telling them, I was no stranger, but an old friend, and should take it unkindly to be treated with ceremony. They sat down, I did so too; and the better to stop the others mouth, who had not invited me, nor ever thought of any such thing, every now and then I gave him a remembrance of the wench, saying, She had asked for, and was infinitely fond of him, with many more lies to that purpose, which made him bear the more patiently with my cramming, for such havock as I made in the first course was never seen. The boiled meat was served up, I tumbled the best part of it down my throat in a moment.

without nicety, but in such a hurry, as if I had not thought it safe enough betwixt my teeth. As I hope for mercy, I laid about me at such a rate, as if my life had depended on it, and was so expeditious, that every thing seemed to vanish in my presence. No doubt but they observed how I poured down the soup, how soon I drained the dish, how clean I picked the bones, and how cleverly I despatched the meat, and to say the truth, at every turn I clapped a good launch of bread into my pocket, till it could hold no more.

When the table was taken away, the Licentiate and I stepped aside, to talk about our going to the aforesaid wench's house, which I represented to him as a very easy matter; but as we were talking at the window, I pretended somebody had called to me from the street, and answered, "Sir, I come this moment;" asked leave of my friend, promising to return immediately. I left him waiting for me, and so he might have done to this day, for I slipped away, and my belly being full, had no more occasion for him. I met him several times after, and excused myself, telling a thousand lies, which are not to our purpose. Rambling thence about the streets at random, I came to the Guadalajara gate, and sat down on one of the benches

that are at the mercer's door. As God would have it, there came two of those creatures that borrow money upon their handsome faces to the shop; they were both close veiled, with only one eye bare to see their way, and attended by an old woman, and a boy half footman, half page. They asked for some very rich new fashion wrought velvet. To commence a discourse, I began to play and pun upon the velvet, turning and winding, till I brought it to all the waggish lewd meanings I had a mind to. I perceived my freedom had put them in hopes they might carry off some present from the shop; and knowing I could be no loser, I offered them whatsoever they pleased. They stood out a little, pretending they did not use to accept of any thing from persons they were not acquainted with. I laid hold of that opportunity, telling them, I owned it was a presumption in me to offer them any thing there, but that I desired them to accept of a parcel of rich silks sent me from Milan, which that page of mine should carry them at night, pointing to one that stood over the way bareheaded, waiting for his master, who was in a shop. And that they might take me for some man of quality, and well known, I pulled off my hat to all the judges, privy-counsellors and peers that went by, bowing as if we

had been very well acquainted, though I knew none of them. These outward shows, and my taking out a piece or two of gold of my hidden treasure, on pretence of giving an alms to a poor body that begged of me, made them conclude I was some gentleman of note. They thought fit to go home because it grew late, and took their leave, charging me to be sure the page should go as privately as might be. I begged of them, only as a favour and token of their good will, a pair of beads, all set and linked in gold, which the handsomest of them had in her hand, as a pledge for me to visit them the next day without fail. They made some difficulty to part with it, till I offered them a hundred crowns in pawn for it, which they refused, hoping by that means to draw me in for a better penny, asked where I lodged, and told me their quarters, desiring me to observe, that they could not receive messages at all times, because they were persons of quality. I led them through the high-street, and before we turned out of it, made choice of the largest and fairest house I could find, which had a coach without horses standing at the door, telling them it was mine, and at their service, as was the horses and master of them. My name, I told them, was Don Alvaro de Cordova, and in I went to rights before their

faces. At our coming out of the shop, I remember, I called over one of the pages from the other side of the way, beckoning to him very stately with my hand, and pretending to order him and the rest of them to wait there till I came, but in reality only asked whether he did not belong to my uncle the privy-counsellor; he answered me he did not, and so I dismissed him, setting myself off with borrowed feathers.

When it was dark night, we all went home, and coming in, I found the counterfeit foldier, that had the clouted leg, with a white wax flambeau they had given him to attend a funeral, and he run away with it. This fellow's name was Magazo, born at Olias; he had been captain in a play, and had fought abundance of Moors in a sword-dance. When he talked with any that had served in the Low Countries, he told them he had been in China; and if he happened to meet with any that had been there, he pretended he had served in Flanders. He talked much of encamping, and lying in the field, though he had never been in any, unless it were to louse himself; named abundance of strong holds, and knew none but the common gaols; highly extolled the memory of Don John of Austria, commended the Duke of Alva for a generous true friend, and had abundance of

names of noted Turks, galleys, and great officers, at his fingers ends, all which he had picked out of a ballad then in vogue concerning the like affairs. But being altogether unacquainted with geography, or any thing of the sea, discoursing about the famous battle of Lepanto, he said, that Lepanto was a very brave Turk. The poor wretch was so ignorant, that he served to make us excellent sport.

Soon after in came my friend with his nose beaten almost flat to his face, all his head wrapped up in clouts very bloody and dirty. We asked him how he came into that pickle? he told us, he went to the alms at the monastery of St. Jerome, and asked for a double portion, pretending it was for some poor people that could not beg; the friars stopped so much from the common mumpers to give it him; at which they being provoked, dogged him, and found he was laying about him with might and main, in a dark corner, behind a door. They fell into a debate, whether it was lawful to cheat to fill one's own belly, and to rob others to serve one's self; the contest rose to high words, which were followed with blows, and those raised many knobs and bumps on his head. They attacked him with their pots they received the pottage in; and the damage done to his nose came by

a wooden dish they gave him to smell to, more hastily than had been convenient: They took away his sword; out came the porter, and had enough to do to part them. In short, our poor brother was in so much danger, that he offered to return all he had eaten, and it would not serve his turn; for all they insisted upon, was, that he begged for others, and thought much to pass for a mumper. Out started from among the rest of the gang a two handed mendicant scholar, crying, Do but behold the figure made up of clouts like a rag baby, as poor as a pastry-cook in Lent, as full of holes as a flagelet, all patches like a magpie, as greasy as an oilman, and as tattered as an old colours; pitiful scoundrel, there are those that receive the holy saints alms that are fit to be bishops, or for any other dignity; I myself am a graduate at Siguenza, and does Mr. Shab-rab think it a disgrace to eat amongst us? The porter interposed, hearing a little old fellow cry out, that though he came there for pottage, he was descended from the famous great captain, and had many lofty relations. But I will leave them here, since our companion was now got off, and endeavouring to shake his bones into their places again.

CHAP. XIII.

The farther Proceedings of this Sharping Gang, till they were thrown all together into Gaol.

THE next that came, was Merlo Diaz, his girdle hung all round with earthen cups and glasses, which he got at nunneries, begging drink at the wheel, without the least remorse of conscience. Don Lorenzo de Pedroso relieved him, coming in with an excellent good cloak, which he had exchanged at a billiard table for his own, that had no sign it had been made of wool, it was so threadbare. This fellow used to take off his cloak, as if he designed to play, and to lay it among the rest, and then not agreeing about the match, he returned to the place, took up the cloak he liked best, and went his way; the same he did at nine-pins and other games. All this was nothing in comparison of Don Cosme, who came in with a regiment of boys at his tail, that were troubled with the king's-evil, cancers or leprosy, or were hurt or lame. He played the white witch, or doctor, that cured by prayers and blessings, having to this purpose learned some superstitious ceremonies and cramp words of an old woman. By this cheat he got more than all the rest together, for if any one came

to be cured without something to make a show under his cloak, or the gingle of money in his pocket, or the cry of some live fowl, he was never at leisure. He had made fools of half the town, making them believe whatsoever he pleased, for there never was so absolute a master at lying; insomuch that he never spoke truth but accidentally. His common discourse was of heaven; when he came into a house, he always said, "God be here;" and going out, "The Lord have you in his keeping." All he had about him seemed hypocrisy, a pair of beads as big as walnuts; he contrived that sometime a discipline made bloody at his nose, should peep out under his cloak; when he shrugged to remove the lice that bit him, he persuaded others it was the hair cloth he wore next his skin, and that this starving was a voluntary fast. Then would he tell stories of strange temptations he overcame; if the devil happened to be named, he cried, "The Lord deliver and preserve us," kissed the ground when he went into the church, called himself unworthy sinner, never lifted up his eyes to look at women, but did not stick to take up their coats. These cheats had so far prevailed on the multitude, that they begged his prayers, and might as well have applied themselves to the devil; for he was not only a

gamester, but a mere shark or pickpocket, but never took the name of God in vain, being always sure to get by it. As for women, he had several children scattered about, and two holy sisters with child at that time; and in short, if any commandment escaped breaking quite, he never failed to crack it.

The next that came was Polacon, making a great noise, and asking for a long sad coloured gown, a great cross, an overgrown false beard and a bell; and used to go about at night in this dress, crying, "Remember you are to die, and be kind to the souls departed, &c." which brought him in considerable alms; and when he found a house open, he went in, and if nobody was in the way, stole all that came to his hand. If any body saw him, he rung his bell, and in a dismal tone, as he knew how to frame it, cried, "Remember, brethren, &c." All these and many more contrivances, and strange ways of stealing, I learned in a month I continued among them. To return where I left off, I showed the beads, and told them the story; they applauded my ingenuity, and the old woman took them into her custody, to sell them, and went about saying, they belonged to a poor maiden gentlewoman, who was fain to sell them for bread, having her story ready for every oc-

caſion. The old jade wept when ever ſhe pleaſed, wrung her hands, and ſighed moſt bitterly; ſhe called all people, children; and over a good ſmock, jerkin, gown and petticoats, wore a tattered long robe of ſackcloth, given her by an anchorite, her friend, who lived on the mountains by Alcala. Her buſineſs was to manage all the goods, to direct and conceal; but the devil, who is always kind to his ſervants, ſo ordered it, that going one day to a houſe to ſell ſome clothes and other things, ſomebody there knew their own goods, ſent for an officer, ſecured the old hag, whom we called Mother Lebrufca, and ſhe preſently diſcovered all the plot, told how we all lived, and that we were gentlemen of prey. The officer left her in the gaol, and came to our houſe, where he found me, and all my companions. He had half a dozen under-catchpoles along with him, and removed the whole ſharping congregation to the priſon, where our gentility availed us very little.

CHAP. IV.

The Prison described, with an Account of what happened to us in it, till the old Woman was whipped; my Companions exposed to public Shame, and I came out upon Bail.

As soon as we came into the gaol, we were loaded with irons, and going altogether to be clapped into the dungeon; but I made use of the money I had to prevent falling into that hell, pulling out a pistole, and making it glitter in the gaoler's eyes, saying, "Pray, Sir, be pleased to hear me a word in private." He having seen a glimpse of the gold, took me aside, and I went on, "I beseech you, Sir, take pity of an unfortunate man." Then I took him lovingly by the hand, and clapped in the piece, which he greedily grasped, being used to such ceremonies, and answered, "I will examine into your distemper, and if it is dangerous, you shall not go down into the hole." I understood him, and submitted myself peaceably, so that he left me out, and turned down my companions. I will not take up time in relating what sport we made in the prison, and as we went along the streets; for being hunched along bound, some of us without cloaks, and others with them, dragging along; it was comical to

see such a parcel of ragamuffins, all patches, and parti-coloured black and white, like magpies. The officers knew not how to take fast hold of them, they were all in such tatters; some they thought to grasp by the flesh, and finding none, for it was all starved away, they feared to be answerable for disjointing the bones. Others lost their coats and breeches by the rough handling of those unmerciful fellows. When they unbound the rope, they led them all in, the rags and clouts dropped off with it. At night I was carried to the common side, where I had a little bed allotted me. It was odd to see some lie down in their whole case, without taking off the least rag they wore in the day. Others, at one motion put off all the clothes they had; others played; but at last we were made fast, and the light put out. We all forgot our irons, and took our rest very favourably. The great jorden, for easing the body, stood at my bed's head; and about midnight all the prisoners began to take their turns at it, letting fly such volleys, that hearing the noise, I concluded it was thunder, and began to pray and bless myself, till perceiving a very ill scent followed, I found it was a sort of bastard thunder. The stink was so great, that it obliged me to speak to them to remove the utensil to some other place, which

some of them taking in dudgeon, we came to high words. I was resolved to be beforehand, for the first stroke is half the battle, and accordingly laid one of them across the face with my belt, he started up in haste, overfet the jorden, which waked all the company with the fall. We beat out one anothers eyes with our girdles in the dark; and the stench was so intolerable, that they all got up, and there was a hideous cry. The gaoler fearing lest some of the vassals might desert him, came running up with all his guards well armed, opened the door, brought in a light, and examined the case. All the evidence condemned me, and I only pleaded the opening of their blind eyes had not let me close mine all night.

The gaoler fancying I would drop him another pistole, rather than be let down into the hole, laid hold of this opportunity, and ordered me to be buried among the rest, which I resolved to endure, rather than break bulk any more. I was conveyed down, where my old friends received me with a great shout, and much satisfaction. That night I lay cool, without any thing to cover me; when it was day, we all came out of the dungeon, saw one anothers faces, and presently our companions demanded the usual garnish-money, on pain of a

good liquoring. I presently disbursed six royals; but my companions having nothing to give, their cause was referred till night. Among the rest in the dungeon, was a one-eyed tall young fellow, with a great pair of whiskers, a sour look, round shouldered, and those well flogged. He had a whole smith's forge upon him, double fetters on his legs, and a great chain hanging from his neck; they called him the Giant; and he said of himself that he was in prison for petty trifles, which I concluded to be some mere larceny; and if any body asked him whether that was the crime, he answered in the negative, but that it was for backward sins: I fancied he had meant some old offences, according to their cant, but at length was informed he was there for Sodomy. When the gaoler reproved him for unluckiness, he would call him the hangman's pantryman, and general storekeeper of sin. At other times he would cry, "You are a fool to contend with one that will vanish in smoke; by the Lord I will stifle you as I go off." This he had said, expecting to be burnt alive. This villain had pleaded guilty, and was such a hellish dog, that we were all fain to wear armour on our posteriors to guard them from him, and scarce durst break wind, for fear of putting him in mind of those parts. He con-

tracted friendship with another they called Robledo; and by a nickname the Tumbler, who said he was in prison for his dexterity, which consisted in making every thing vanish he laid his hands on. He had been lashed by all the beadles and hangmen in Spain; his face was all over cuts and scars, his ears were at a great distance, for he carried but one about him, having left the other behind him in his travels; his nose was foldered together, having been cleft with a cut of a sword. Four other rampant fellows, like lions in heraldry, herded with those two, all of them loaded with chains, and condemned to thrash the sea, that is to the galleys. These said they might boast, in a short time, that they had served the king both by sea and land; and a man would not believe how impatiently they expected their commillion. These people taking it ill that my comrades had not discharged the duty of garnish, contrived to give them a sound lashing at night, with a curious rope's end, provided for that purpose. When night came, we were put into the dismal vault, they put out the light, and I presently secured myself under my bed; two of them began to whistle, and a third to lay about him with the rope's end. The sparks perceiving it was like to go ill with them, crowded themselves up so

close together, all the flesh of their bones being before devoured by the mange and lice, that they found room enough in a cranny between the boards, lying like so many fleas in a seam, or bugs in a bedstead. The lashes sounded on the boards, but the parties they were designed for lay close without speaking a word. The whippers observing they did not complain, laid aside their discipline, and began to pelt them with stones, bricks, and rubbish, they had gathered to that effect. This project succeeded better, for a stone hit Don Toribio on the neck, and raised a bunch as thick as his fist. He cried out murder, and the knaves, that he might not be heard, fell a singing all together, and rattled their chains. Don Toribio struggled with his companions to get undermost, and in the scuffle, their bones rattled like castanets, their coats fell all in tatters, and not a rag was left upon them. The stones flew about so thick, that in a short space poor Don Toribio had as many knobs on his head, as there are on a pine apple. Finding there was no manner of protection against that dreadful shower of hail that fell upon us, but there he was like to die a martyr, without being guilty of the least piety or religion, he cried out, begging they would let him get out of that place, and he would pay

immediately, delivering up his clothes in pawn. The persecutors consented, and though his companions would have held him, because he sheltered them, he got up the best he could, all battered, and came over to my side. The rest were not so quick at promising the same, but that they had as many knocks as hairs on their heads, yet offered up their clothes towards paying the garnish; thinking it was better to lie abed for want of clothes, than for broken bones. Accordingly they were discharged for that night, but in the morning had orders to strip; they did so, and it appeared that all their clothes put together would not bring one half-penny loaf. They lay abed, that is, wrapped up in a blanket belonging to the public, on which all the prisoners used to louse themselves. As soon as they were warm they began to feel their friends about them, for the lice had kept a long lent, some of them had not broke their fast for a week before, and yet were as big as nutmegs, and laid in their teeth as close as a sharp bull-dog. They expected nothing but to be devoured that morning for a breakfast, threw away the blanket, cursing their fate, and clawing the very skin off their bones with their hands.

I slipped out of the dungeon, desiring them

to excuse me for not bearing them company, because it was not convenient. I greased the gaoler over again with three pieces of eight, and being informed who the clerk was that had the charge of prosecuting us, sent for him by a young running thief. He came, I got into a room with him, and after some discourse concerning our business in general, I told him I had some little money, which I desired him to keep for me; and that as far as might be done with safety, he would favour an unfortunate young gentleman, who had been unadvisedly drawn into that offence. "Believe me, Sir," said he, when he had grasped the ready, "the whole matter depends upon us; and he that has a mind to be a knave, may do a great deal of mischief: I have sent more men to the gallows without any cause, but for my pleasure, than there are words in an indictment. Leave it to me, and do not question but I'll bring you off safe and sound." This said, he made as if he was going away, but came back again from the door to ask something for honest James Garzia, the constable, for it was convenient to stop his mouth with a silver gag; something more he hinted at concerning the clerk of the court; saying, "It is in this clerk's power, Sir, to undo a man by turning up the

" whites of his eyes, raising his voice, making a
" noise to rouse a lord mayor or recorder when
" they are asleep, as it often happens, and many
" other such dangerous actions." I apprehend-
ed him, and lugged out fifty royals more; in re-
turn for which he bid me set my cloak right,
taught me two cures for a cold I had got in the
prison; and to conclude, said, " Make yourself
" easy, the gaoler will be kind to you, if you
" give him but a piece of eight, for these sort of
" people do nothing out of good nature, but all
" for interest." I could not but smile at his
observation, he went his way, and I gave the
gaoler a crown; he knocked off my irons, and
gave me leave to go to his house. He had a
wife like a whale, and two daughters as ugly as
the devil, and as senseless as stocks, yet errant
whores in spite of their faces.

It happened that the gaoler, whose name was
Blandones de San Pablo, and his wife's Donna
Anna Moraez, came home to dinner one day,
when I was there, in a great rage, fuming, and
would not eat. His wife dreading some mighty
thing had happened, drew near, and tormented
him so long with the usual importunities, that
at last he said, " What a pox d'ye think ails me?
" That scoundrel dog of Almendros, having
" some words with him about farming the gaol,

"told me you are not spotless." "Has the villain
"ever scoured me?" cried she, "by my gran-
"dame's soul you don't deserve to be called
"man, since you did not tear his beard for him;
"did I ever employ his servants to clean me?"
Then turning to me, she went on, "By the
"Lord he cannot call me Jew, like himself, who
"is a rakehell by his father, and of one of the
"tribes of Israel by his mother. By my troth,
"my Paul, had I heard him, I would have put
"him in mind that the inquisition had laid the
"St. Andrew's cross upon his back." The
gaoler in very doleful manner replied, "Alas,
"wife, I held my peace because he told me
"you were doubly and trebly allied to that
"race; for he did not talk of your not being
"spotless on account of swinishness, but for not
"eating that flesh. Then he called me Jew,"
quoth she, "and you could take it so calmly.
"Brave times! is that the regard you have for
"the honour of Donna Anna Moraez, the
"daughter of Estefania Rubio, and John de
"Madrid, both of them well known to God
"and all the world." "Daughter to John de
"Madrid," said I. "To John de Madrid of Aun-
"non," cried she. "By the Lord," quoth I, "the
"rogue that said so is a Jew, a Sodomite, and a
"cuckold." Then turning to them, I went

son, w^h the honoured John de Madrid, whose
 soul rest in peace, was my father's own cousin
 - the german, and I will make it appear what he
 y^t was, and whence he came, for it concerns me;
 - and if once I get out of prison, I'll make the
 dog eat his words. I have my pedigree here
 or in town in gold letters, which makes out both
 his families." They were all overjoyed with
 their new relation, and much encouraged to
 hear of the pedigree; and at the same time I
 had no such thing, nor did I know who they
 were. The husband began to sift out the point
 of kindred, coming to particulars, but I to pre-
 vent being caught in a lie, made as if I were
 going out in a passion, swearing and cursing.
 They all held me, desiring no more might be
 said of the matter. Every now and then I
 would let fly, John de Madrid, what a pedigree
 I have of his. Another time, as if I were mu-
 sing, I dropt, John de Madrid the elder, father
 to John de Madrid, was married to Ann de
 Azevedo the Burly, and then I was hushed a
 little longer. In short, I managed this tack so
 well, that the gaoler kept me at bed and board
 in his house; and then the honest clerk, what
 at his request, and what for the bribe I gave
 him, ordered the business so well, that the old
 woman went out foremost upon a dapple gray

ass, instead of the cart used in England, with a crier before her, making proclamation that she was a thief, and close at her heels the hangman, laying her on as he had been directed by the gentlemen of the long robe. Then followed all my companions upon braying palfries, bareheaded and faced, thus to be exposed to public shame, like standing on the pillory, and so ragged that they could not hide their nakedness. After this solemnity they were banished for six years. For my part, I was bailed out with the assistance of the clerk; and the other at the court played his part, for he changed his tone, spoke low, skipped over some words, and swallowed whole sentences.

CHAP. V.

How I took a Lodging, fell in Love, pretended to be a Conjuror, and the Misfortune that befel me.

BEING out of prison, I found myself all alone, and destitute of friends, though I was told they were travelling towards Seville upon the public charity; yet I would not follow them, but went away to a lodging, where I found a fair, clear skinned wench, free, pleasant, sometimes thrust-

ing herself into all companies, and other whiles drawing back, and playing the coy one. She lisped a little, was afraid of mice, valued herself upon her hands; and the better to show them, always snuffed the candles, carved up the meat at table, and held them up at church, in the street was always pointing where every body lived, sitting in company continually contrived to be pinning up her headclothes; and of all games loved to play at draughts, because then her hands were never off the board. She would frequently yawn, though she had no need, to show her teeth, and then cross her mouth; and in short the whole house had so much of her hands, that her very father and mother were out of patience with them. They entertained me very well in their house, for they made it their business to let lodgings, and could receive but three at once, which, at this time, were myself, a Portuguese, and a Catalanian. All of them were very courteous to me; I liked the wench well enough by way of diversion, and thought it a conveniency to have her in the house. I courted her, told her abundance of pleasant stories I had picked up to pass the time; brought them home news, though there were none abroad; did them all the service I could, provided it cost nothing; persuaded them

I understood witchcraft, and was a conjurer, and could make show as if the house were sinking, or all in a flame, without doing the least harm; all which the credulous foolish women easily believed. All the family was civil and kind to me; but all this did not amount to love, for being but indifferently clad, though I had somewhat mended my apparel with the help of the gaoler, keeping up the kindred by continual sponging at his house; they did not take so much notice of it as I could have wished. To gain the reputation of being a man of wealth, though I concealed it, I contrived to send some of my acquaintance to inquire for me when I was not at home. One of these came and inquired for Don Ramiro de Guzman, for I had told them that was my name, having been informed by my friends that changing of names was not expensive, and might prove very advantageous. The man, I say, inquired for Don Ramiro, a rich merchant, who had lately farmed two branches of the revenue of the king. Neither the old nor young landlady knew me by this description, and therefore answered, that no such man lived there, but only one Don Ramiro de Guzman, who was rather ragged than rich, a little fellow, hard favoured, and poor. That is the person I want, replied the man; and

as light as you make of him, I would desire no more, if it were God's will, than as much as he is worth above 2000 ducats a-year. He told them a great many more lies of this sort; they stood amazed, and he left them a sham bill of exchange he pretended he had on me for 9000 ducats, desiring them to get me to accept it. Both mother and daughter gave credit to my wealth, and immediately pricked me down for a husband. I came home very unconcerned, as if I knew nothing of the matter; immediately they gave me the bill of exchange, saying, Wealth and love are hardly to be concealed, Don Ramiro, it is very well that you make us such strangers to what you are, when you know we have so much kindness for you. I made as if I was displeased at his leaving the bill, and went away to my chamber. It was pleasant to see how they changed their notes as soon as they thought I had money; they said every thing became me, admired every word I spoke, and I was the most accomplished person in the world.

Perceiving they had bit at the bait I had laid for them, I made the wench acquainted with my affections, which she received with much joy, returning a thousand loving expressions, and so we parted for that time. The next night, the more to confirm them in the conceit

of my wealth, I shut myself up in my chamber, which was parted from theirs only by a thin wall of lath and plaster, and taking out fifty crowns, counted them over so often that they reckoned six thousand. This contrivance of making them believe I was rich, succeeded as well as I could wish, for their whole study was to please and make much of me. The Portuguese, who lodged in the house with me, was called Don Vasco de Meneses, and was knight of the famous order of Christ in Portugal, which in Spain they reckon only fit for Jews and such as are descended from them. He wore a mourning cloak, a pair of boots, a little band, and large whiskers, and was passionately in love with Donna Perenguella de Reboledo, for that was our mistress's name. When he courted her, he would make long speeches, sigh as bitterly as a holy sifter at a sermon, and sing very scurvily. There was continual bickering between him and the Catalonian, who was the most wretched miserable creature that ever God put life into; for, like a tertian ague, he fed but once in three days, and then his bread was so hard, that it had broke several of his teeth. His way of making love was looking big and bullying, though at the same time he had no more heart than a hen, and cackled as much. These

two perceiving I had got the start of them in the amorous intrigue, made it their whole business to rail at me. The Portuguese said I was a shabby lousy scoundrel; the Catalonian gave out that I was a pitiful coward. I knew all they said, and sometimes heard it, but did not think fit to make any reply. In short, the wench gave me a full hearing, and received my *billet doux*s, which I began, according to the laudable custom, with, "Pardon my presumption;" "The power of your beauty," &c. Then I went on with the terms of passion and flames, and feigned myself her slave, sealing it with a heart struck through with a dart. After all this ceremony, we came to plain thee and thou, and to rivet the notion of my quality, already conceived, I went abroad, hired a mule, and muffling myself up in my cloak, and changing my voice, asked for myself, inquiring whether Don Ramiro de Guzman, lord of Valcerado and Vellorete, lived there. The wench made answer, Here is a gentleman of that name, of a low stature, and described me. I replied, he was the man, and desired her to tell him, that Diego de Solarzana, his steward, was going to receive his rents, and called as he went by to kiss his hand. Having left this message, I went away, and came home awhile after.

They received me with the greatest joy imaginable, complaining that I would not let them know I was lord of Valcerado and Vellorete, and delivered the message they had for me. This made the wench mad to secure such a rich husband, and so she contrived that I should talk with her at one o'clock in the morning, getting out of a gallery upon the tiles her window looked over.

The devil, who is always contriving of mischief, so ordered it, that at night, being eager to improve that opportunity, I went up into the gallery, and getting out of it upon the tiles, where I was to entertain my lady, my feet slipped, and I came down upon a neighbour's house, who was a notary, with such force, that I broke all the tiles, and left the print of them in my sides. The dreadful noise waked half the house, and fancying there had been thieves, for that sort of people are always apprehensive of them, they came out upon the top of the house. I would have hid myself behind a chimney, which made the suspicion the greater; for the notary, with the assistance of two servants, and a brother, beat me like a stock-fish, and bound me in the presence of my mistress, without any regard to what I could say for myself. She laughed heartily, because having told her

before that I could play abundance of odd pranks by the help of art magic, she concluded the fall had been only a trick to make sport, and therefore lay calling to me to come up, for I had done enough. This and the beating made me roar out unmercifully; and the best of it was, that she believed it was all sham, and laughed immoderately. The notary began to form a process, and because he heard some keys rattle in my pocket, he not only said, but writ it down, that they were picklocks, though they were showed him, and it was impossible to beat it out of him. I told him I was Don Ramiro de Guzman, at which he laughed heartily. Seeing myself in a wretched condition, unmercifully beaten before my mistress, and like to be hurried away to gaol with a scandalous name, though innocent, I knew not what course to take. I fell upon my knees before the notary, and begged of him for the love of God, but all that would not prevail with him to quit me. Hitherto we were still upon the tiles, for these people have never the more conscience for being the nearer heaven; they resolved to carry me down, as they did through a skylight that was over a kitchen.

CHAP. VI.

The Event of this Disaster, how I bilked my Lodging, and other Adventures.

I HAD not one wink of sleep all that night, thinking on my misfortune, which was not my falling upon the tiles, but into the cruel and merciless clutches of the notary; and when I called to mind the pretended picklocks he had found in my pocket, and how many leaves he had writ of my process, I perceived there is nothing in nature increases so fast as a crime, when a notary has the handling of it. I spent the night in contriving; sometimes I resolved to beg him for Jesus Christ's sake; but then reflecting how he was used, when upon earth, by men of that kidney, I was soon off of it. I tried several times to unbind myself, but he presently heard me, and came to see if all was fast; for he was more watchful, studying how to make out a lie, than I was to clear myself. He got up by break of day, and was dressed so early, that there was no creature stirring in the whole house besides himself, and the devil that prompted him; he laid hold of a good leather belt, strapped me soundly with it over and over again, and reproved me severely for the vile sin of thieving, as

being a thing he was so well acquainted with himself. This was the posture we were in, he laying on me, and I almost resolved to give him money, which is the only thing in nature that mollifies those stony hearts. By this time my mistress, who had seen my fall and cudgelling, being convinced it was a real misfortune, and no enchantment, had, by her earnest prayers and entreaties, prevailed upon the Portuguese and Catalonian to come to my assistance, as they did. The notary hearing them speak to me, immediately drew out his pen to insert them into his process, as accessaries. The Portuguese had not patience to hear it, but let fly some ill language, telling him, he was a man of quality, and the king's servant, and that I was a very honest gentleman, and it was very knavishly done to bind me after that manner. This said, he began to unbind me, and the notary to cry out for help. In came two servants of his, half bum-bailiffs and half porters, treading upon their own cloaks, and tearing their bands, as they use to do, to make it appear as if they had been beaten in the execution of their office, and roared out for all people to aid and assist them in the king's name. However, the Portuguese and Catalonian unbound me, and the notary perceiving there was nobody to stand by

him, said, "I vow to God I am not to be so
"served, and were not you, gentlemen, persons
"of such worth, it might cost you dear; how-
"ever, order these witnesses to be contented,
"and take notice, that I serve you generously
"without any prospect of interest." I under-
stood the knack; took out a piece of eight and
gave it him, and had a very good mind to re-
turn the beating he had given me, but forbore
rather than own the receipt of it, and went
away with them, returning hearty thanks for
my deliverance, my face all bruised with the
cuffs, and my back wealled with cudgelling.
The Catalonian made very good sport, and ad-
vised the wench to marry me to invert the pro-
verb, "That I might not be cuckolded first and
"beaten after, but first beaten and then cuc-
"kolded." He called me a bold desperate fel-
low, ironically alluding to my cudgelling, which
fly way of his still put me out of countenance.
If I happened to go in to give them but a
friendly visit, he presently began a discourse of
thrashing, of canes and cudgels.

Finding myself thus run down, and that they
began to discover the cheat of my riches, I laid
about how to get away from the house and carry
off my equipage, without paying for my diet or
lodging, which amounted to some money. I

agreed with one Licentiate Brandalagas, of the town of Hornillos, and two friends of his, that they should come and seize upon me. They came at the day appointed, told the landlady they were sent by the inquisition, and charged her with secrecy. The whole family quaked for fear, because I had pretended to them that I was a conjurer. They spoke not a word against carrying me off, but when they saw my equipage moving, they would have made a seizure for what I owed, but the others answered, That all the goods belonged to the inquisition. This made them all hush, they let them go peaceably, and when they were gone, said, They had always dreaded it. The Portuguese and Catalonian positively affirmed, that those who used to inquire for me were devils; that I had certainly a familiar spirit, and when the women told them how much money I had counted, they swore it was no money, though it seemed so, and the others believed them.

I got clear off, and saved all my diet and lodging, and then, with the advice of those that had stood my friends, I contrived to alter my dress into the genteel fashion, to put on strait breeches, and a great band, and get a scoundrel by the name of a page, and two rakes for footmen, as the mode then was. The others en-

couraged me so to do, showing how I might make myself at once by that means, getting a wife with a great fortune, by making such a figure, which frequently happened at Madrid; adding, that they would put me in the way, finding out one for my turn, and contriving how I might gain admittance. Covetousness prevailing, and the desire of a wife, I consented, searched all the brokers shops, bought my wedding clothes, hired a horse, and mounted in great state that very day, but could not light on a footman. Away I made to the high street, and stopped at a saddler's shop, as if I were buying some furniture. Two gentlemen on horseback accosted me, Whether I was about buying a rich embroidered saddle and housings I had in my hand? I laid it down immediately, saying, It was at their service, if they liked it, and kept them awhile with a thousand compliments. At length they said they would go and divert themselves in the Prado, which, at Madrid, is like our Hyde Park, where the ladies go out in their coaches, and the gentlemen on horseback to take the air. I told them I would wait on them, if they would give me leave; and left word with the saddler, that in case my pages and footmen came thither, he should send them after me, describing the livery to him, which said, I clap-

ped in between the two gentlemen, and away we went. By the way I considered with myself, that none who saw us could possibly guess or decide to which of us the pages and footmen belonged, or which of us had none. I began to talk very loud of the tilting and other sports on horseback at Talevera, and of a piebald horse I had, highly commending a lusty stoned horse I expected from Cordova. Every page or footman I met on horseback I stopped, asking, Whose it was? then talked of his marks like a jockey, and asked, Whether he was to be sold? Then I would make him take a turn or two up and down the street, and though there were no fault, would find one in the bridle, and tell him how to mend it. Fortune so ordered it, that I met with several opportunities of showing my talent. The gentlemen went musing, and, as I fancied, thinking with themselves, What upstart country 'squire is this? One of them had a plain badge of knighthood on his breast, the other his hanging at a chain set with diamonds; and therefore to amuse them, I said, I was looking out to buy some choice horses for myself and a kinsman of mine, that were to be at some sports on horseback. When we came to the Prado, I took my feet out of the stirrups, turning my heels out and walked easily, with my cloak

hanging upon one shoulder, and my hat in my hand. Every body gazed at me ; one said, " I have seen that spark walk on foot ;" another, " The scoundrel makes a pretty figure ;" I made as if I did not hear them and walked on. The two gentlemen went up to a coach full of ladies, and desired me to banter awhile. I left the side where the young ones were, and went to the other where there was a mother and an aunt, two pleasant old jades, the one about fifty years of age, the other little less. I told them a thousand amorous lies, and they listened to them ; for there is no woman, though never so old, but has a good conceit of herself ; offered to treat them, and asked, Whether the other ladies were married ? They replied they were maids, and it was easy enough to guess at it by their talk. Then I made the usual compliment, wishing they might see them well preferred to their mind, and they were much taken with it. Next they asked me how I spent my time at court ? to which I answered, That I kept out of the way from a father and mother, who would fain marry me, against my will, to a woman that was ugly, foolish, and of a mean family, only because she had a vast portion ; and for my part, ladies, I had rather have a wife well born, in her smock, than the wealthiest Jew that is ;

For, God be praised, my patrimony is worth about forty thousand ducats a-year; and if I succeed in a law suit, which goes hitherto well on my side, I shall want no more. The aunt hearing this account, very hastily cried, " Lord, " Sir, I admire you for that humour, do not " marry without you like, and with a woman " of a good family, for I do assure you, that " though I am not very rich, I have refused to " marry off my niece, who has had very rich " pretenders, because they were not of quality. " She is poor, it is true, for her portion is but six " thousand ducats; but as for birth she is inferior to none." I do not question that, Madam, said I. By this time the damsels had ended their discourse with the gentlemen, asking a collation. The two gazed upon one another, and began to shrink for fear; but I laying hold of the opportunity, told them, I was sorry my pages were out of the way, because I had nobody to send home for some boxes of sweetmeats. They returned thanks, and I desired them to be the next day at the summer-house in the Prado, and I would send them a cold treat. They accepted of the invitation, told me where they lived, and inquired after my quarters; so the coach went off, and my companions and I made towards our homes. They

observing that I was so generous in offering the treat, began to take a fancy to me, and the more to oblige me, desired I would sup with them that night. I stood off a little, but not too long, and supped with them, sending out several times to seek my servants, and swearing I would turn them away. When it struck ten, I told them, that was the appointed time for an amorous intrigue, and therefore begged they would excuse me for that time, and so went away; first engaging them to meet the next day at the summer-house. From them I went to deliver the hired horse to the owner, and thence home, where I found my companions playing at all-fours; told them what had happened, the engagement I had made; we resolved to send the collation without fail, and to lay out two hundred royals on it. Having thus ordered affairs, we went to bed, where I own I could not sleep all night, for thinking how I should bestow the portion, for I could not resolve, whether it were better with it to build a good house, or to put it out to interest, not knowing which would be most advantageous.

CHAP. VII.

How the Collation was managed, with other Accidents and notable Misfortunes.

IN the morning we got up to provide the plate, servants and collation; and there being nothing in this world but money can command, as being a thing worshipped by all men. I found a nobleman's butler, that furnished plate, and undertook to wait himself with three of his fellow-servants. The forenoon was spent in disposing affairs, and after dinner I hired a nag, and at the appointed time set out for the summer-house. I had abundance of papers sticking out of my pockets; besides that, my coat being unbuttoned, some peeped out at my bosom, as if I had been a man of mighty business. When I came to the place, the ladies and gentlemen were there; the former received me with much shew of love, and the latter talked to me by plain *THEE* and *THOU*, in token of familiarity. I had told them my name was Don Philip Tristian, and nothing was to be heard in all their mouths but Don Philip and Don Philip; but I told them I had been so entirely taken up with some business of the king's, and the accounts of my estate, that I had much ado to be as good as my

word, and therefore they must expect a collation provided in a hurry. By this time the butler came with all his tackle, plate and servants; the gentlemen and ladies looked at me and held their peace. I ordered him to go into the eating-room and lay the cloth, whilst we went to divert ourselves at the fish-ponds. The old women drew near to fawn and flatter, and I was glad to see the young girls barefaced, for since I was born, I never saw so delicate a creature as that was I designed for my wife. A skin as white as alabaster, delicate fair hair, a curious fresh colour in her cheeks, a little mouth, fine small teeth standing close together, a well shaped nose, large black eyes, tall of stature, charming hands, and she lisped a little. The other was not amiss, but more wanton, and I was jealous she had been handled. We went to the fish-ponds, saw all that could be seen, and by her talk I found that my intended bride would have been in danger in Herod's days, of being taken in among the innocents. In short, she had not a grain of sense; however, having never designed them for counsellors or jesters, but only to lie with them, and it being pleasanter, as Aristotle says, to lie with a handsome woman, though a fool, than with one of wit that is ugly; I always pitch upon those that are properest for

the use I would have them. This consideration comforted me, we went towards the banqueting-house, and as I passed along, some twig of the hedge got hold of the lace of my band, and tore it a little; the young lady stepped and pinned it with a silver pin, and her mother bid me send it to her house the next day, and Donna Anna, so the maiden was called, would mend it. All the treat was in excellent order, hot and cold, fruit and sweetmeats. When the cloth was taken away, I spied a gentleman coming along the garden with two servants after him, and who should this be but my old master Don Diego Coronel. He drew near, and seeing me in this habit, could not take his eyes off me, talked to the women, calling them cousins, and all the time turned to look again and again. I kept talking to the butler, and the other two gentlemen, being my master's friends, were in deep discourse with him. He asked them, as afterwards appeared, my name, and they answered, it was Don Philip Tristian, a very honest gentleman of a great estate. I saw him bless himself, and at length he came up to me before them all, and said, "Sir, will you pardon me, "for, by the Lord, till I heard your name, I "took you for a different person than you are; "in my life I never saw any thing so like a ser-

"vant I had at Segovia, called Pauly, the son
"of a barber in that town." They all laughed
heartily, and I used all the art I could to forbear
betraying myself by blushing, and said, I long
mightily to see that man, because abundance of
people had told me I was extremely like him.
"Good God," cried Don Diego, "like him, I
"never saw such resemblance, his very shape,
"voice and mein. I declare to you, Sir, it is
"prodigious, and I never beheld any so exactly
"alike." The old women, mother and aunt,
asked how it was possible that a gentleman of
such quality should be so like that mean scound-
rel? And that I might conceive no jealousy of
them, one said, "I know Don Philip very well,
"it was he that entertained us at Ocanna, by
"my husband's order." I took the cue, and
answered, "I should always be ready to do
"them all the service I could in all parts." Don
Diego offered his service, and begged pardon for
the affront of taking me for the barber's son,
"adding, "Sir, you will scarce believe it, but his
"mother was a witch, his father a thief, his un-
"cle the hangman, and he himself the wicked-
"est base fellow in the world." It is easy to
guess what I felt, hearing such scandalous things
said of me to my face; I sat upon thorns, though
I did all I could to dissemble my uneasiness. My

two new acquaintance and I took our leaves, and Don Diego went into the coach with the ladies. Then he asked them what was the meaning of the treat, and their being with me? the mother and aunt told him, I was heir to so many thousand ducats a-year, and had a mind to marry Nancy; that he might inquire into the matter, and he would see how convenient it was, and how advantageous to their family. This discourse held them home, which was near the church of St. Philip. My comrades and I went together to their house, as we had done the night before, and they having a mind to fleece me, asked me whether I would play. I guessed at their meaning, and set to it, the cards were brought, I let them win at first, but soon fetched it about, won about three hundred royals, took my leave and went home.

There I found my two companions, the Licentiate Brandalagas, and Peter Lopez, who were practising new cheats upon the dice. As soon as they saw me, they left off to inquire how I sped. I only told them that I had been in great danger; how I had met with Don Diego, and how I came off. They comforted and encouraged me to proceed, and not to desist from the enterprize by any means. We had now notice given us that they used to play at lan-

kenet at an apothecary's house close by. I understood the game at that time tolerably well, had cards made for the purpose, and knew all sorts of cheats, so we resolved to go put in for the plate among them. I sent my friends before me, who coming, asked them, whether they would please to play with a Monk of the Order of St. Benedict, who was just come to town to be cured of a tedious distemper among his relations and friends, and was well stocked with crowns and ducats? This set them all agog, and they cried, "Let the friar come in God's name. He is a man of note in the order," added Peter Lopez, "and being of the monastery, has a mind to divert a few hours, and does it only for company's sake." "Let him come," quoth they, "we do not care what his motive is." "We tell you so much in regard to the privacy it requires," answered Brandalagas. "Enough," said the man of the house, "you need say no more." This satisfied them that the thing was so, and the lie went down glib. My two supporters came for me, and I was dressed with my nightcap on, in a Benedictine habit, which I had got by the wheel of fortune in my rambles, a pair of spectacles on my nose, and short brushy beard, to show as if it were grown since my sickness. I

walked in very demurely, sat down, and we began to play. They all combined to put upon me, but I swept all before me, being much sharper at it than they, so that in about three hours time, I won upwards of a thousand three hundred royals. I scattered some small bounty, and took my leave with the usual compliment of, "The Lord be praised," charging them not to be scandalized to see me play, for it was mere diversion, and nothing else. They who had lost their money, cursed themselves to the pit of hell. I took my leave again, away we went, got to our lodging about half an hour after one, parted our booty, and so to bed.

This was some satisfaction to me for the unlucky accident before it; I got up in the morning to hire a horse, but they were all let, by which I perceived there were more in my circumstances besides myself. To walk the streets afoot did not look well, especially at that time. Not knowing how to mend myself, I went towards St. Philip's church, where I found a lawyer's footman with a horse in his hand, waiting for his master, who had just alighted to hear mass in that church. I clapt four royals in his hand, to let me ride two or three turns along the next street, where my mistress lived. He consented, I mounted, rode twice up and down

the street, without seeing any body, but the third turn Donna Anna looked out. When I saw her, thinking to gallant her, showing my horsemanship, and being but an indifferent jockey, and unacquainted with the horse's qualities, I gave him two lashes, reining him at the same time; he reared first, then struck out behind, set arunning full speed, so that I came clear over his head into a puddle. I had no other recourse in this pitiful plight, all beset with boys, and in the presence of my mistress, but to cry out, "A cursed dog, my Sorrel would never have done so. I shall pay for these mad pranks one time or other. They told me he was unlucky, and yet I would needs be trying tricks with him." By this time the footman brought me the horse again, for he stopt as soon as he had thrown me; I mounted again, and Don Diego Coronel, who lived in the same house with his kinswoman, hearing the noise, looked out. The sight of him startled me very much; he asked, "Whether I had any hurt?" I answered, No, though at the same time one of my legs was almost crippled. The footman pressed me hard to give him his horse, for fear his master should come out of the church and see me, for he was going to court. It was my misfortune, that as he was calling me

to be gone, the lawyer came behind us, and knowing his steed, ran at the footman, laying him about the head and face with his fist, and asking him, as loud as he could cry, "How he
"durst have the impudence to let any body
"ride his horse?" and what was worst of all, he turned to me, and in a very angry manner,
"Bid me get down in the name of God. All this was in the full view of my mistress and Don Diego Coronel, which put me as much out of countenance as if I had been whipped at the cart's tail. I was wonderfully cast down and melancholy, and with good cause, to have two such misfortunes befall me upon so small a spot of ground. In fine, I was fain to alight, the lawyer mounted, and went his way; and I the better to palliate the business, staid in the street, talking to Don Diego, and said, "I never
"mounted such an unlucky jade in all my days.
"My cream-coloured horse is yonder by St. Philip's church, and is very hard mouthed
"when he sets arunning. I was telling some
"there how I used to ride him at full speed, and
"take him off at one check. They told me, I
"could not do it with a horse that stood there,
"which was the lawyer's you saw; I resolved
"to try; you cannot imagine what a restive
"jade it is, and has such a base saddle, that it

"was a wonder he did not kill me. It was so,
"answered Don Diego; and yet, Sir, you seem
"to feel some hurt in that leg. I do so, replied
"I, and therefore I'll go take my own horse
"and get home." The young lady was fully
satisfied that all I said was true, for I could per-
ceive she was much concerned at my fall; but
Don Diego, who saw farther, grew mistrustful
upon what had happened with the lawyer in
the street.

This proved the cause of my ruin, besides
many other unlucky accidents that befel me,
and the greatest of all, that when I went home
and came to a chest, where in a portmantua I
had left all the remains of my inheritance, and
what I won at play, except only an hundred
royals I had about me, I found my good friends
the Licentiate Brandalagas and Peter Lopez had
seized it, and were fled. This was a mortal
stroke, and I stood amazed, not knowing which
way to turn myself, and saying, "A curse on
"him that puts his trust in ill gotten wealth,
"which goes as it comes." Unhappy man!
what shall I do? I could not tell whether it
were best to go myself, or send a hue and cry
after them. I did not like this course, because
if they should happen to be taken, they would
charge me with the disguise of the monk's ha-

bit, and other matters, and that was the direct way to the gallows; and as for following of them, I knew not which way. At last, for fear of spoiling my marriage, which I looked upon as secure, and that it would make amends for all losses, I resolved to stay, and push it on vigorously. I dined, after dinner hired a horse, went away towards my mistress's street, and having no footman, because it was not decent to be seen without one, I waited at the corner of the street, until some man passed by that looked like one, and away I went after him, making him a footman, though he was none. At the other end of the street I did the like, standing out of sight until another went by like the former, and then rode down again. I know not whether it was the certainty of the truth that I was the very scoundrel Don Diego suspected, or the fresh cause of jealousy, on account of the lawyer's horse and footman, or what else that did it, but Don Diego took care to inquire who I was, what I lived on, and observed all my actions. At last he took so much pains, that he discovered the whole intrigue the strangest way that could be imagined, for I pressed on the business of matrimony very hotly, plying the ladies continually with letters; and Don Diego being as eagerly importuned by them, who were in haste

to conclude it, as he was upon the scent after me, met the Licentiate Flechilla, the man I invited myself to dine with, when first I entered myself among the sharpening gang at Madrid before my imprisonment. This man taking it ill that I had not gone to see him again, according to promise, happening to talk with Don Diego, and knowing I had been his servant, told him how I met him when I went to dine with him; and that but two days ago he had met me on horseback, and I informed him I was going to be married to a great fortune. This was enough for Don Diego, who returning home immediately, met with the two knights I had made myself so familiar with, gave them an account of the whole affair, and desired them to be ready at night to give me a good thrashing in his street, where he would contrive I should be, and they might know me by his cloak, which he would take care I should have on. They agreed, met me immediately in the street, and all of them carried it so fair at that time, that I never thought myself so secure of their friendship as then. We continued talking together how to divert ourselves at night, till towards the close of the evening the two knights took their leave, and went down the street. Don Diego and I being left by ourselves, turned to-

wards the church of St. Philip. When we came to the next turning, Don Diego said to me, "Let me beg the favour of you, Don Philip, to change cloaks with me, for I have occasion to go this way, and would not be known." "With all my heart," answered I; took his cloak very innocently, and gave him mine in an unhappy hour, offering to go along, and stand by him if need were; but he having projected to stand by me to break my bones, replied, "He was obliged to go alone, and therefore desired me to leave him." No sooner had I parted from him, but the devil contrived, that two who waited to thrash me on account of a wench, thinking, by the cloak, that I was Don Diego, fell on a cudgelling me as thick as hail; I cried out, and by my voice and face they discovered I was the wrong man, at which they ran away, and I was left with my beating, put up three or four good bumps they had raised, and made a halt, not daring to go into my mistress's street a while for fear. At last about twelve, which was the time when I talked with her, I came up to the door, where one of Don Diego's friends that waited for me, being ready with a good cudgel, gave me two blows across the shins, which laid me flat on the ground; as soon as I was down, the other

played his part, giving me a slash across the face from ear to ear: They then took away my cloak, and left me on the ground, saying, "This is the reward of false, deceitful, base scoundrels." I cried out for help, not knowing to whom I was beholding for that usage, though, by what they said at parting, I guessed it might perhaps be the landlord I had cheated, with the contrivance of being taken up by the inquisition, or the gaoler I had so long imposed upon, or my companions that fled; for, to say the truth, I expected that cut from so many places, that I could not be positive from whom it might come. Don Diego was the person I least suspected, and I was farthest from the mark; but still cried out, "Thieves, Thieves," which at length brought the watch, who took me up, and spying a gash a quarter long on my face, and that I had no cloak, nor could tell how that misfortune came, they carried me away to a surgeon's house, where I was dressed; then they asked where I lived, and thither they conducted me. I went to bed, and lay all night awake, full of remorse and confusion; my face being cut in two, my body bruised, and my legs so crippled with the cudgelling, that I could not stand, nor had scarce any feeling in them. In fine, I was wounded, robbed, and in

such a condition, that I could neither follow my friends, nor proceed towards matrimony, nor stay in Madrid, nor get away.

CHAP. VIII.

My tedious Cure ; what passed between my Landlady and me ; how I turned Beggar, picked up a considerable Sum of Money, and went to Toledo.

THE next morning, by break of day, my landlady appeared at my bed's head. She was a choice old woman, at the years of discretion, past fifty-five, a great pair of beads in her hand, and a face like a chitterlin, or a walnut shell, it was so full of furrows. Her name was up in the neighbourhood, and so she lay in bed till noon when she pleased, and with any body that could fancy it. She promoted pleasure and contrived delight ; her name was Madam de la Guia ; her trade to let lodgings at home, and procure for others abroad. Her house was never without lodgers all the year round. It was pleasant to see how she instructed a young girl in veiling herself, teaching her what parts of her face she must be sure to expose to sight. If she had good teeth, she advised her to be al-

ways a-laughing, though it were at a visit of condolence; if she had fine hands, she taught her to be always playing with them; if fair hair, to have some loose locks peeping out under the veil; if good eyes, to be continually ogling; and if sparkling small ones, to shut and then open them wide, and be sure to look up. As for washes, and other cosmetics for the skin, she would make an Ethiopian as fair of complexion as a Dane; so that many women came to her, and went home so altered, that their own husbands did not know them; but her greatest art consisted in putting off reputed virgins, and patching up cracked maidenheads. All this I saw performed by the time I had been but eight days in the house; and to complete all, she directed the women how to pick pockets, and taught them what pretty expressions they should use. She showed them how they should wheedle a jewel out of a man; young girls were to do it by way of wit and jest, ripe maids as a due, and old women as a piece of respect and honour. She put them in the way how to beg dry money, and how to draw rings and other trinkets. Upon occasion, she quoted some famous ones of her own profession at Alcala, at Burgos, and in other parts of Spain where any had gained renown in this

art of cullyng. I have given this account of her that I may be pitied, considering into what hands I was fallen; and the words she said to me may be the more taken notice of: She was always very fond of proverbs, and began her speech after this manner: "A drop of water
" continually falling on a stone makes a hole
" in time; as you sow, so will you reap; if you
" walk barefoot among thorns, you must expect
" to be scratched. My child, Don Philip, to
" deal plainly, I do not understand you, nor can
" I conceive how you live. You are young, and
" it is no wonder you should be somewhat wild,
" without considering, that even whilst we sleep,
" we are travelling to our end. I, who have
" now one foot in the grave, have the privilege
" to tell you so much. It is very odd I should
" be told that you spent much money, and no-
" body knows how; and that you have, since
" you came to town, sometimes appeared like a
" scholar, sometimes a sharper, and sometimes
" like a gentleman. All this comes of keeping
" company; for, my child, tell me where you
" herd, and I'll tell you what you are; and
" birds of a feather flock together; and many a
" good bit is lost between the lip and the dish.
" Go you fool, if you had a hankering after wo-
" men, did not you know that I had always a

“ good stock of that commodity by me, and
“ that I live by that trade. I breed them up
“ to hand, and fit them for that business, and
“ then I have them ready at my beck. What
“ occasion have you to be drawn away by one
“ scoundrel to-day, and by another rascal to-
“ morrow; picking up a dirty drab here, and
“ a pickell’d jade there, who fleece you to keep
“ another. I vow and swear you had saved ma-
“ ny a crown if you had applied yourself to me,
“ for I am not overfond of money. By my fa-
“ ther’s soul, and as I hope for mercy, I would
“ not have asked you now for what is due for
“ lodging, but that I want it for some private
“ uses, and to make a little ointment.” She
had her pots of ointment, though she was nei-
ther surgeon or apothecary, and if any body
greased her she anointed herself and flew out
with the smoke. Perceiving that all her dis-
course and long speech ended in a dun; for
though that was her text, she did not begin
with it as others do, but made it her conclu-
sion; when I found that I was not at all to seek
for the occasion of her loving visit, which was
the first she made me whilst I lodged in her
house, excepting only one day, when she came
to answer for herself, because she heard I had
been told some story about her witchcraft, and

that when the officers came to seize her, she had cast such a mist before their eyes, that they could neither find the house nor the street. She came then to tell me it was all a mistake, for they meant another of her name; and no wonder, for there were more of the name and profession. I paid her down the money, and as I was telling it out, ill fortune, which always attends me, and the devil, who never forgets to plague me, so ordered it, that the officers came to seize her for a scandalous liver, and had information that her gallant was in the house. They came directly into my room, and seeing me in bed, and her by me, they laid hold of us both, gave me half a score good bangs, and dragged me out of bed. Two others held her fast, saluting her with the titles of bawd and witch. Who would have thought it of a woman that lived as I have said. The noise the constables made, and my cries, gave the alarm to the gallant, who was a fruiterer, and lay in the next room within, he set arunning, they observing it, and being informed by another lodger in the house that I was not the man, scourged after, and laid hold of him, leaving me well beaten and my hair torn off; yet for all I had endured, I could not forbear laughing to hear how the dogs complimented the old woman.

One cried, "How gracefully you will look in a
"cart, mother; by my troth it will be a great
"satisfaction to me to see a thousand or two of
"rotten oranges and turnip tops fly after you."
Another said, "There is care taken that you
"shall make a good show and be well attend-
"ed." At last they caught her bully, bound
them both, begged my pardon, and left me to
myself.

It was some comfort to me to see my good
landlady in the way to preferment, so that all
my care was to be in a readiness that I might
throw one rotten orange at her; though con-
sidering what a maid of hers, who was left be-
hind, told me, I much doubted whether ever
they could secure her in prison, for she talked
of flying, and some other matters I did not at
all like. I lay eight days in the house under
the surgeon's hands, and was scarce able to go
abroad at the end of them, for they were fain
to stitch up my face, and I could not go with-
out crutches. By this time my money was
spent, for the hundred royals all went in lodg-
ing, diet, and cure; so that to avoid further
expences, when my treasure was gone, I resol-
ved to go abroad upon crutches, and sell my
linen and clothes, which were very good. I
did so, and with part of the money bought an

old leather jerkin, a canvass waistcoat, a patched beggar's great coat down to my ancles, gamashes on my legs, and great clouted shoes, the hood of the great coat on my head, a large brass crucifix about my neck, and a pair of beads in my hand. A mumper, who was a master at his trade, taught me the doleful tone and proper phrases for begging, so I began immediately to practise it about the streets. Sixty royals I had left I sewed up in my doublet, and so set up for a beggar, much confiding in my cant. I went about the streets for a whole week, howling in a dismal tone, and repeating my lesson after this manner: "Merciful Christians of the Lord, take pity on a poor distressed, miserable, wounded, and maimed creature, that has no comfort of his life." This was my working-day note, but on Sundays and holidays I altered my voice, and said, "Good charitable people, for Christ Jesus's sake, give one farthing or a halfpenny to the poor cripple, whom the Lord has visited." Then I stood a little, which does good service, and went on again. "See my poor limbs were blasted, unhappy wretch that I am, as I was working in a vineyard; I lost the use of all my precious limbs; for I was as strong and as sound as any of you are, the Lord be for ever prai-

"sed, and preserve your health and limbs." Thus the farthings came dropping in by shoals: I got abundance of money, and was in a way of getting much more, had I not been thwarted by an ill-looking lusty young fellow, lame of both arms, and with but one leg, who plied my very walks in a wheelbarrow, and picked up more pence than I did, though he begged not half so genteelly; for he had a hoarse voice, which ended in a squeak, and said, "Faithful servants of Jesu Christ, behold how the Lord hath afflicted me for my sins; give one farthing to the poor, God will reward you," and then he added, "for the sweet Jesu's sake." This brought him a mighty revenue, and I observed it, and for the future I cut off the *s*, and said only *Jesu*, because I perceived it took with the simple people. In short, I altered my phrases as occasion served, and there was no end of my gettings. I had both my legs bound up in a leather bag, and lay in a surgeon's porch, with a beggar that plied at the corner of a street, one of the errantest knaves that ever God put life into, very rich, was as it were our superior, and earned as much as all of us. He was broken bellied, and it hung out in a bunch; besides, he bound his arm hard with a rope above the shoulder, which made his hand look as if it

were lame, swelled, and had an inflammation. He lay flat on his back, with all the rupture naked, which was as big as his head, and cried, "Behold my misery, see how the Lord chastises his servants." If a woman happened to pass by, "Sweet beautiful lady, the Lord bless your dear soul." Most of them would give him an alms for calling them handsome, and would make that their way to their visits, though never so much about. If any ragged soldier came by, he called him "Noble Captain;" if any other sort of man, "Good worthy gentleman;" if he saw any body in a coach, "Right Honourable Lord;" and if a clergyman on a mule, "Most Reverend Archdeacon." In short, he was a most intolerable flatterer, and had particular ways of begging for holidays. I contracted such intimacy with him, that he acquainted me with a secret, which in a few days made us rich; and was, that he kept three little boys, who begged about the streets, stole every thing that came in their way, brought to him, and he was the receiver; besides, he had two small children that learned to pick pockets, and he went halves with them. Being so well instructed by such an able master, I took to the same courses, and he provided me with fit instruments for my purpose. In less than a month's

time I had got above forty crowns clear, besides all extravagant expences, and at last, designing that we should go away together, he disclosed to me the greatest secret and cunningest design that ever beggar had in his head, which we both joined in; and was, that between us we every day stole four or five children, which being cried, we presently appeared, inquired what marks they had to be known by, and said, "Good God, Sir, I found this child at such a time, and had I not come as I did, a cart had run over it, but I have taken care of it." They readily paid us the reward, and it throve so well, that I got above fifty crowns more, and by this time my legs were well, though I still wore them wrapped in clouts. I resolved to leave Madrid and go away to Toledo, where I knew nobody, nor nobody knew me. Having set this resolution, I bought an old suit of gray clothes, a sword and bands, took leave of Valcazar, the beggar I last mentioned, and went about the inns to find some conveniency to go to Toledo.

CHAP. IX.

How I turned Player, Poet, and Gallant. The Misfortunes that ensued, till I quitted the Employment.

AT an inn I met with a company of strolling players, who were going to Toledo, and had three carts. It pleased God that among the gang I found one who had been my companion at Alcala; left the school, and was turned actor. I told him what a mind I had to go to Toledo, and he had much ado to know me, the fear across my face had so altered me, and he could not forbear blessing himself, standing in admiration. In conclusion for a small spill of money, he was so much my friend as to prevail with the rest to let me go with them. We were all hig-gledy-piggledy, men and women together, and I was mightily taken with one of the crew, who was the chief dancer, and acted the queen's and other great parts in plays, for she was a notable jilt. Her husband happened to sit next to me, and not thinking to whom I spoke, but following my lewd inclination of enjoying her, I asked him, "How could a man do to have a little
" talk with this woman, that I might spend
" twenty crowns upon her, for I have a great
" liking to her? It does not become me to an-

"swer your question, as I am her husband," replied the man, "nor is it fit I should talk of any such thing; but to deal ingenuously, for I am nothing partial, she deserves to have any money spent upon her, for there is not a more dainty bit of flesh upon the earth, nor such a pretty wanton girl." This said, he leaped out of the cart, and got into another, in all likelihood that I might have an opportunity of making my addresses to her. I was pleased with the man's answer, and perceived it may be said of such men, that they had wives as if they had none, perverting the expression to the worst sense. I laid hold of the opportunity; she asked me whether I was going, and some questions concerning my life and circumstances? and in conclusion, after much talk, referred it to Toledo to act there.

We diverted ourselves by the way the best we could, and I happened to act a piece of a play that I had borne a part in when I was a boy, which I did so well, that they took a liking to me, and being informed by my friend, who was in the company of all my misfortunes and hard circumstances, which I had made him acquainted with, she asked me, Whether I would make one among them? They so highly extolled their strolling course of life, and I was

then in such want of some support, and so fend of the wench, that I agreed with the head of them for two years. Writings were signed between us to oblige me to stay with them, so they gave me my allowance and allotted my parts, and thus we came to Toledo. They gave me two or three prologues to get by heart, and some other grave parts, which suited well with my voice. I applied myself to it, and spoke the first prologue in the town, where we had a simile of a ship in distress, and wanting provisions, which put into that port; I called them noble audience, begging their attentions, pardon for all faults, and so went off. There was great clapping of hands, and I was liked on the stage. We acted a play, written by one of our actors, and I admired how they should come to be poets, for I thought it belonged only to very learned and ingenious men, and not to persons so extremely ignorant. But it is now come to such a pass, that every head of them writes plays, and every actor makes drolls and farces; though formerly I remember no plays would go down but what were written by the greatest wits in Spain. In short, the play was acted the first day, and no soul could make any thing of it. The second day we began it again, and as God would have it, there was some warlike exploit to begin with;

and I came upon the stage in armour, and with a target on my arm, which was a great mercy, or else I had infallibly been pelted to death with oranges, quinces, and all things that came next to hand. Such a storm of hail was never seen, and the play deserved it, for it represented a king of Normandy in a hermit's habit, without any sense or reason, had two scoundrel footmen to make sport, and when they came to unravel the plot, there was nothing but marrying of all the company, and there was an end; so, that to say the truth, we had but what we deserved. We all fell foul of our companion, the pretended poet, and I bidding him consider what a danger we had escaped and take warning by it; he answered, he had not made one word of the play, but only picked up bits and scraps, some from one, and some from another, as they came in his way, which he had jumbled together, like a beggar's cloak made of all sorts of rags; and the ill luck was, that it had not been neatly fine drawn. He owned, that all the players who wrote plays, were obliged to make restitution, because they only stole from all the parts they acted, which was easily done, and they were willing to run all hazards in hopes of getting ten or twenty crowns. Besides, that going about all the country, and being showed plays

by several persons, they borrowed them to read, and then stole them, which, when they had done, they only added some scurvy part and left out another better, and so they called it their own; protesting that no player ever knew how to write a scene any other way.

I liked the contrivance, and took a great fancy to try it myself, as having some small genius for poetry, and being somewhat versed in poets, for I had read Garcilasso, and others, and so I resolved to fall into that knack; so that with this, and my actresses, and my own playing, I made a shift to live. By that time we had been a month at Toledo, acting several new plays, and endeavouring to retrieve our first fault, I was grown famous, and had given out, that my name was Alonzo, to which the generality added the title of the Cruel, because I had acted a part of that nature, to the great liking of the mob and upper galleries. I had now got several new suits of clothes, and some heads of other strollers endeavoured to inveigle me away from my company; but I pretended to criticise upon plays, and railed at the most celebrated actors, finding fault with one man's gestures, censuring another's gravity, and allowing another to be a tolerable actor. My advice was always taken in contriving the scenes, and adorning the stage; and

if any play came to be offered, it was left to me to examine. Being encouraged by this applause, I launched out as a poet in a song, and then wrote a small farce, which was well approved of. Next I ventured at a play, and that it might gain respect, made it all of devotion, and full of the Blessed Virgin. It began with music, had fine shows of souls departed, and devils appearing, as was the fashion then, with old gibberish when they appeared, and strange shrieks when they vanished. The mob was mightily pleased with my rhyming to Satan, and my long discourses about his falling, or not falling from heaven. In short the play was acted, and well liked. I had more business than I could turn my hands to, for all sorts of lovers flocked to me, some would have songs on their mistress's eyes, others on their foreheads, others on their white hands, and others on their golden locks. There were set rates of all sorts; but I sold cheap to draw the more custom, because there were other shops besides mine. As for godly ballads, I supplied all the country clerks and runners of monasteries, and the blind men were my best friends, for they never allowed less than eighty royals, and I always took care they should be bombastic, and stuffed with cramp words, which neither they nor I under-

stood. I brought up many new fashions in verse, as tailors do in clothes, and was the first that concluded my songs like sermons, praying for grace in this world, and glory in the next.

Thus was I happy as I could wish, my pockets full of money, highly in vogue, and in such a prosperous condition, that I aimed at being chief of a company of strollers. My house was handsomely furnished, for the devil put into my head to buy the old mouldy tapestry of taverns to hang my rooms at a cheap rate, all which cost me about five or six crowns; for they afforded a better prospect than any the king has, for being so ragged you might see through any part of them, which you cannot do through any of his. The oddest thing happened to me one day that ever was heard of, which I will not spare to make known, though it be to my shame. When I was writing a play, I used to shut myself up at home in the garret, where I kept close and dined. The maid used to bring up my dinner and leave it there; and it was my way to act all I wrote, and talk aloud, as if I had been upon the stage. As the devil would have it, when the maid was coming up the stairs, which were dark and upright, with the dish of meat and plates in her hand, I was composing a scene of hunting a

bear, and being wholly intent upon my play, cried out as loud as I could,

Fly, fly the bloody bear ; take heed, I say,

Alas, I'm kill'd, and you'll become its prey.

The poor wench, who was a filly Galician, hearing me roar that I was killed, and she in danger to become a prey to the bear, thought it had been real matter of fact, and that I called to her to save herself. Upon this conceit she took to her heels, and treading on her coats in the confusion, tumbled down all the stairs. The soup was spilt, the earthen pots broken, and she run out roaring into the street, " that a bear was " killing a man." I could not be so nimble, but that all the neighbours were about me, asking where the bear was? and I could scarce make them believe me, though I told them it was the maid's foolish mistake, for I was only acting a part of a play. I lost my dinner that day; my companions were told of it, and all the town made sport with it. Many such accidents befel me whilst I followed the trade of poetizing, and would not forsake that wicked course of life.

It happened, as frequently does to that sort of people, that the chief of our company being known to have got considerably at Toledo,

was arrested for some old debts, and thrown into gaol, which broke up our gang, and every one went a several way. As for my part, though my comrades would have introduced me into other companies, having no great inclination to that calling, for I had followed it out of mere necessity ; I thought of nothing but taking my pleasure, being then well dressed, and in no want of money. I took my leave of them all, they went their ways ; and I, who had proposed to quit an ill course of life, by desisting from being a stroller, to mend the matter, dropped out of the fryingpan into the fire, for I fell into much worse, making it my whole business to gallant grates, and aim at impossibilities by courting of nuns. The encouragement I had to commit this madness, was, that I understood there was a most charming nun, at whose request I had wrote abundance of little devout pastorals ; and she had taken some liking to me on that account, and seeing me act Saint John the Evangelist in a holiday spiritual sort of play. The good lady made very much of me, and had told me, there was nothing troubled her so much as my being a player ; for I had pretended to her, that I was the son of a gentleman of quality, and therefore she pitied me, and I at last resolved to send her the following lines :

" I HAVE quitted the company of players, rather to comply with your desires, than because it was otherwise convenient for me so to do; but to me all the company in the world, without yours, is solitude. I shall now have the more opportunity of being yours, as being absolutely my own master. Let me know when there will be admittance to the grate, and that will inform me when I may be happy, &c."

The runner carried the note, the good nun was wonderfully pleased to hear of my change of life, and answered me as follows :

" I rather expect to be congratulated, than to congratulate you on your good fortune; for my wishes and your prosperity are inseparable. You may be looked upon as recovered out of a desperate estate; it only remains, that you persevere, as I shall do. I question whether there will be any liberty at the grate to-day; but do not fail to come at even-song, for there at least we shall see one another, and perhaps I may find means to put some trick upon the lady abbess."

Farewell.

I liked the note, for the woman was really witty, and very handsome. After dinner I put on the best suit I used to act the gallant in on the stage, went to church, pretended to pray, and then began to examine every inch of the grate and veil before the choir, to see if I could discover her. At length it pleased God I had the good fortune, or rather the devil contrived me the ill luck, that I heard the old sign, I began to cough, she answered, that there was a hellish imitation of a cold, or as if the church had been full of lily of the valley. I was quite weary of coughing, when a tiffical old woman appeared at the grate, and I discovered my mistake; for this is a very uncertain sign in a monastery, because as it serves for a sign among young ones, it is habitual with old ones, and when a man thinks it a call to catch a nightingale, he finds nothing but an owl. I stayed a long time in the church, till even-song began, which I heard out, for the admirers of nuns have this madness, besides all the rest, that they must play the hypocrite, and pray against their will; besides, that they never go beyond the eve, being ever in expectation, but the day of enjoyment never comes. I never failed being at even-song, and stretched out my neck a handfull longer than it was, to endeavour to see into

the choir. The clerks were my constant companions, and I was well received by the priest, who was a pleasant man, and walked as stiff and upright as if a spit had been run through him. I went by times to take my place in a court the nuns windows looked into, it was comical to see the strange postures of others, as mad pretenders as myself. One gazed without ever so much as winking; another stood with one hand on his sword, and his beads on the other, like a statue upon a tomb; another with his arms stretched out as if he were flying; some gaping, as if they would have had their hearts fly out at their mouths; some leaning against the walls, as if they had been to support them; some walking as if to be bought for their pacing, like horses; and others with *billet doux*s in their hands, like falconers, bringing the hawk to the lure. The jealous lovers were some laughing in rings, and looking up, others reading verses and showing them. All this was below where we were, but above the place for the nuns, was a little old tower, all full of cracks, chinks, and peeping holes, where appeared nothing but a confusion, here a hand, there a foot, in another place a head, in another a handkerchief, a glove, or the like; some walked, others coughed, and so every one had her particular way. In sum-

mer it is pleasant enough to see the men parch themselves in the sun, whilst the women are little concerned at their sufferings. In winter some of us stay so long in the wet till we are mouldy, and the moss grows upon us; neither snow nor rain can drive us away; and all this is only to see a woman through a grate and a glass, like some holy relic, or curious piece of workmanship, for that is all we can ever expect. It is just like falling in love with a blackbird in a cage, if ever she talks; or with a fine picture, if she does not. The greatest favour ever to be attained, is to touch the ends of the fingers. They lean their heads against the double grates, and shoot volleys of fine conceits through those loopholes. This is perfect love at hide and seek, and yet for this we study to talk fine and whisper, must endure every old woman that chides, every doorkeeper that commands, and every one at the wheel that gives what answer she pleases.

I had followed this cursed employment so long, that I was well looked upon by the lady abbess, civilly treated by the good priest, and a familiar with the clerk, for we hide our folly from them, and this is all the happiness such madmen can aspire to. I began to be weary of the doorkeeper's turning me away, and of the

nuns begging, and considered how dear I endeavoured to purchase a place in hell, which others have at so easy a rate, and that I even anticipated to take share of it in this world by such extravagant means. It was plain that I rode post to perdition, and threw away my soul only for a few looks. When I talked to her, for fear of being overheard by the rest, I used to thrust my head so close to the grate, that the print of it would not come out in two days, and at the same time spoke so low, that she could not understand one word without a trumpet at her ear. Every body that saw me, cried, "A curse on thee, thou wicked nun-hunting dog;" besides many other worse compliments. All these things brought me to my senses, and I resolved to quit my nun, and to this purpose got off her the value of fifty crowns of her work, in silk stockings, rich purses, and sweatmeats, pretending to have them raffled for; but as soon as I had them in possession, I set out for Seville, to try my fortune there, as the greater city. The reader may guess how much the nun was concerned, not for me, but what I cheated her of.

CHAP. X.

What happened to me at Seville, till I took Shipping for the West Indies.

I HAD a good journey from Toledo to Seville, for I was sharp at play, had loaded dice, both high and low, and could palm a dice, hold four, and throw out three; besides, I had false cards, and knew how to pack any, and turn up what I pleased, and abundance of other fine arts and sleights of hand, which I pass by as tedious, and for fear they might rather serve to teach others evil practices, than for warnings of what they are to shun; but perhaps some few words of advice may be of use to such as are not skilled in those practices; and they who read my book, if they are cheated, may thank themselves. Never think yourself safe because you find the cards, for they will change them upon you whilst a candle is snuffing. Take care they make no scratches or other impressions on the cards; and if my reader is a poor scoundrel, he must observe, that, among that gang of rake-hells, they prick the cards they would know with a pin, or fold them to leave a crease. If you happen to play among a better sort of people, take heed of cards which are originally

falsified, and have private marks on the paste-board. Never trust to a clean card, nor think yourself safe with a foul one, for the cheat is equal in both. Take heed the dealer never bows any cards more than others, which is a certain way to pick your pocket; and observe that no motions be made with the fingers, or no hints given by the first letters of words. I will not let you farther into this secret, this is enough to make you always stand upon your guard; for you may be assured I do not tell the hundredth part of the cheats.

Being master of these arts, I got to Seville, at my fellow traveller's expence, winning all the hire of the mules, my other charges, and money to boot, of them, and my landlords at the inns. I alighted at that they call the Moor's Inn, where I was found out by one of my school-fellows at Alcala, whose name was Mata, but he thinking it did not make noise enough, had changed it to Matorral. He dealt in men's lives, and sold cuts and slashes, which throve well with him; he carried the sign of his trade on his face, where he had received his share. He always made his bargain to a nicety for length and depth, when he was to bestow any, and said, "No man is so absolute a master, as
" he who has been well hacked and hewed him-

"himself:" And he was in the right, for his face was all over seams, and he was a downright drunken bully. He told me, I must go sup with him and his comrades, and they would bring me back to the inn. I went with him, and when we were in his lodging, he said, "Come, spark, lay by your cloak and look like a man, for this night you shall see all the brave fellows in Seville; and that they may not look upon you as a cully, tumble your band, thrust out your back, and let your cloak hang loose, as if it were dropping off, for we hate to see any man's cloak set fast upon his back. Wind about your chops, and make faces with both sides of your mouth, then talk big, swear, and be very rude." I learned his lesson, and he lent me a dagger, broad enough to have been a simitar, and for length it wanted nothing of a sword but the name. "Now drink off this quart of wine," said he, "for without you blunder, you will not look like a true bully." We had gone so far in my instructions, and I was half seas over with what I had drank, when in came four of the gang, with four vizards instead of faces, bound about the middle like monkeys, with their cloaks instead of ropes; their hats standing a tiptoe on their heads, and cocked up, as if the brims were

nailed to the crowns; a whole smith's shop about their swords and daggers, and the points of them beating against their right heels. Their eyes stared, their whiskers turned up, and their beards like brushes. They made their compliment with their mouths, and then, in a hoarse tone, and clipping their words, saluted my companion, who returned in like manner. They sat down, and spoke not one word to ask who I was, but one of them looking at Matorral, and opening his mouth, thrust out his under lip, by way of pointing at me. My introducer answered in the same language, laying hold of his beard, and looking down; after which they all got up, embraced, and expressed a great deal of kindness for me. I returned the same compliments, which were like smelling to so many hogsheads of wine. When it was supper-time, in came a parcel of strapping scoundrels to wait at table, whom the topping bullies call under-spurleathers. We all sat down together at table, and the first thing they served up was a dish of pickles, which as soon as they had tasted, they all fell to drinking to my honour, by way of welcome; and till I saw them drink to it, I must confess I never knew I had any. Next came fish and flesh, all of it high seasoned to promote drinking. There was a great bowl full

of wine, like a half tub, on the ground, and he that was to pledge, lay all along to drink by wholesale. I was taken with the contrivance, but by that time a few healths had gone about; we none of us knew one another. They fell to talk of warlike affairs, oaths flew as thick as hail, a matter of twenty or thirty persons were cut out for destruction; amidst their cups the mayor of the city was adjudged to be cut in pieces; then they reaped up the heroic actions of several famous cut-throats and murderers, and drank to the souls of some that were hanged. Some that were maudlin wept bitterly, calling to mind the untimely end of Alonzo Alvarez, one of their brethren, whose body was exposed on a gibbet for the crows to feast on. By this time my companion's brains were turned topsy-turvy, and laying hold of a loaf, and looking earnestly on the candle, he said with a hoarse voice, " By this, which is the face of God, and " by that light which came out of the angel's " mouth, if you think fit, gentlemen, we will " this very night maul the serjeant's man that " pursued our poor one-eyed friend." They all set up a dismal cry, ratifying the proposal made by an oath after this manner: They drew their daggers, laid their hands on the edge of the bowl, and lying along with their chops to it,

27-207

said, "As we drink this wine, so will we suck the blood of every informing catchpole." "Who was this Alonzo Alvarez," said I, "whose death is so much regretted." "He was," answered one of them, "a brave fighting lad, a man of spirit, full of mettle, and a good companion. Let us go, for the devil begins to be strong in me." This said, we all went out a catchpole-hunting. Being quite overcome with wine, and all my reason drowned, I never reflected on the danger I was running myself into. We came to the strand, where we met the round, which no sooner appeared, but our swords were drawn, and we attacked them. I did like the rest, and at the first charge we made way for the filthy souls of two catchpoles to fly out of their bodies. The constable took to his heels, and ran up the street, crying out for help. We could not pursue, because he had too much the start, but took sanctuary in the cathedral, where we were sheltered against justice, and slept as much as was requisite to discharge the fumes of the wine we had drank. When we came to our senses, I could not but admire, that two catchpoles should be killed by, and a constable fly from, a parcel of mere hog-heads of wine, for we were no better at that time. We fared well in our sanctuary, for the

termagant whores of the town flocked to, and spent all they had upon us. A strapping jade, called Grajales, took a fancy to, and clothed me from head to foot after her own humour. I liked this sort of living better than any I had yet tried, and therefore resolved to stick to my trusty Grajales till death. I learnt all the cant, and in a short time was an absolute master among the ruffians. The officers of justice took all possible care to observe us, and kept rounds about the sanctuary; yet for all that we took our rambles after midnight in disguise. Perceiving this was like to be a tedious business, and that ill fate pursued me every where, though it made me never the wiser to take warning for the future, yet it tired me out like a true obstinate sinner; and therefore, with the advice of my doxy Grajales, I resolved to go to the West Indies, taking her along with me to try whether I could meet with better fortune in another country; but it proved worse, for they never mend their condition who only change places without mending their life and manners.

FORTUNE IN HER WITS,

AND THE

HOUR OF ALL MEN.

JOVE, in a splenetic rage rent his very throat, and pierced the earth with his bawling. He summoned all the gods in haste to assemble before him in counsell. The first that appeared was Mars, that celestial Don Quixote, armed cap-a-pee, with his spear advanced, and making passes in the air. Next to him came the platter faced delty Bacchus, with a peruke made of vine branches, his eyes overflowing, his mouth like a wine press, belching out liquor at second hand, his speech hammering, his steps reeling, and his brain intoxicated with the juice of the grape. On the other side appeared hobbling Saturn, gorging himself with his own sons. With him came dripping Neptune, the watery god, about him hung the sea-weeds like rags, clung together with the spawn of fish, and with the

water that ran from him, laying the dust of the charcoal raised by his follower Pluto, a god of the devils, with his head and face powdered with soot, perfumed with brimstone and gunpowder, and clothed in such profound darkness, that he was scarce discernible, though close followed by the glaring sun, with his brazen face and tinseled beard. Venus, as she came, filled the heavens with the vast circumference of her fardingale, hiding the five Zones under her petticoats, her face but half licked, and the tour that was to cover her bald skull hanging all awry for haste. After her came the Moon, with her face cut into quarters. Pan rushed in with a great noise, being followed by two vast herds of Sylvens, Fawns, and other hairy and cloven footed gods of the woods. All heaven swarmed with Manes, Lemures, and other little deities, who all took their chairs, the goddesses * squatting down like tailors upon their legs, the whole assembly attentively fixing their eyes upon Jove. Mars rattling his armour like the harmony of a tinkers kettle, started up, and looking stern as a bully after a beating, thundered out these words: "Open thy mouth with a vengeance, thou
"mighty Hector of this upper region, open thy

* In Spain the women do not sit on chairs, but on cushions upon the ground.

"mouth, I say, for you seem to be in a dream." Jove accosted in so rough a dialect, whilst, though it was summer, he held the sparkling thunder-bolt, when it had been much properer to have cooled himself with a fan, raising his voice, answered, "Keep your prating tongue betwixt your teeth, and let us call Mercury." In the twinkling of an eye Mercury dropped before him, holding his little wand like a juggler, his heels fledged, and his little hat in the shape of a mushroom on his head. Then Jove said, "Thou ubiquitous god, shoot thyself into the world, and in a trice drag Fortune hither by the ears."

In an instant the sprite of Olympus, clapping wings instead of spurs to his heels, vanished with such swiftness, that the sight could not distinguish between his departure and return. He came like Lazarillo leading blind Fortune, who, with a staff in one hand, felt out her way, and in the other held a string, which was a bridle to a little dog. She stood a tiptoe upon a globe, in the midst of a wheel bound with threads, beads, ribbons, cords, and ropes, all which, as it moved, knit themselves together, and unknit again. Behind, as her maid, came Opportunity, a broad-faced flat-nosed, bald-pated wench, only on the top of her forehead was one single lock, scarce big enough to make one good.

whisker. This lock was as slippery as an eel, and played in the air, being moved at the breath of every word. By her hands it appeared that Opportunity lived upon hard labour, and doing all the drudgery of Fortune. All the gods appeared disgusted at the sight of Fortune, and some of them made signs as if she had turned their stomachs, when she, in a squeaking tone, and speaking at a venture, said, "My eyes be-
"ing in their swaddling clouts, and my sight in
"the dark, I cannot discover who you are that
"make up this assembly; but be you who you
"will, my discourse is directed to you all, and
"particularly to thee, O Jove, who spittest thy
"thunderbolts after the drippings of the clouds;
"tell me what whimsey came into thy head to
"send for me, whereas for many ages past thou
"hast never so much as thought on me. Per-
"haps thou and the rest of thy mob of godlings
"have forgot how far the extent of my power
"is, and that I have tossed about both thee and
"them, no less than I do poor mortals." Jove
swelling, and looking stern, replied, "Thou sot,
"thy extravagancies, thy follies, and thy wick-
"edness are so great, that mortals believe, since
"we do not curb thee, there are no deities, that
"heaven lies waste, and that I am a poor insigni-
"ficant god. They complain, that thou givest

"villanies those rewards which are due to merit;
 "that virtue is unregarded and vice encouraged;
 "that thou placest those in the judgment-seats;
 "who ought to be preferred to the gallows; that
 "thou bestowest dignities on those whose ears
 "should be nailed to the pillory; and that thou
 "oppresshest and impoverishest those thou ought-
 "est to raise and enrich." Fortune looking pale
 with anger, and chafing, said, "I am no fool;
 "I know what I do, and all my actions are
 "guided by prudence: You who call me rash
 "fot, remember you cackled like a goose to
 "Leda, that you played the false coiner with
 "Danaë, that you bellowed, and acted the bull
 "with Europa, and have been guilty of a thou-
 "sand other roguish mad pranks, and that all
 "those who attend you, have been only crows
 "and magpies; none of which sopperies can
 "be laid to my charge. If persons of merit
 "are laid aside, and virtuous men pass unreward-
 "ed, the fault is not altogether mine; many
 "despise what I offer them, and their modesty
 "is laid at my door as a crime: Others, rather
 "than stretch out their hands, let slip what I
 "tender them; others snatch it from me with-
 "out my consent, more men are enriched by
 "forcing it from me, than by my free gift.
 "There are more that steal what I refuse, than

" that keep what I give them; many receive of
" me, that they know not how to preserve; they
" lose it, and pretend I take it from them; many
" accuse me for misplacing gifts on others, which
" would be much worse employed on them-
" selves: There is no man happy without being
" envied by many, and no man is miserable with-
" out being contemned by all. This maid has
" always served me, without her I never have
" done any thing; her name is Opportunity;
" hear her, and learn of a drudging wench how
" to judge of things." Then Opportunity let-
ting her tongue run, for fear of letting herself
slip, said, " I am that sort of good-natured fe-
" male, that offer myself to all men; many find,
" but few enjoy me; I am a female Sampsoness,
" for all my strength lies in my hair; he that
" can hold fast by my lock, need not fear to be
" thrown by my mistress: It is I that manage,
" I that distribute her, and when men know
" not how to pursue their own interests, and
" make their advantages, they lay all the blame
" upon me: Folly and ignorance have furnish-
" ed men with these hellish sentences: Who
" would have believed it? I did not think. I
" did not reflect on it. I did not know. It is
" well enough yet. What matter is it. It is
" neither here nor there. To-morrow will do.

"There is time enough. I shall not want. God
"will provide. All days are not alike. If one
"thing fails, another hits. &c." These follies
"make men conceited, slothful, and careless ;
"these are the gaps that I slip out at ; these are
"the rubs that overset my mistress's wheel ; and
"these the gusts that split her sail. Then if the
"fools let me slip by them, what fault is it in
"me to be gone ? If they lay the rubs in the
"way of my mistress's wheel, why do they com-
"plain of its jolting ? If they know it is a wheel,
"whereof every part is sometimes up and some-
"times down, and that each part descends in
"order to rise, and rises in order to fall again,
"why do they entangle themselves in it ? The
"sun has stood still, the wheel of Fortune never
"did. Whosoever has thought to fix it, only
"gave it a check, that it might whirl again with
"the greater fury. Its motion, like that of time,
"puts a period to all worldly felicities and cala-
"mities, to all the lives in the world, and by
"degrees to the world itself. This, O Jove, is
"matter of fact, let who will gainsay it."

Fortune encouraged at these words, and turn-
ing on all hands like a weathercock, said, "Op-
"portunity has discovered how unjustly I am
"accused ; however, I am resolved myself to
"convince thee, thou supreme thunderer, and"

"all thy company, carousing in nectar and ambrosia, notwithstanding that I always had, now have, and shall ever continue to have, as much power over you, as over the meanest rabble in the world. I hope to see your divinities starving with hunger and cold for want of victims, and that not so much as a black pudding shall be sacrificed to you, but you shall only serve to fill up ballads, and be brought in for rhyme sake in love songs, for the diversion of the mob, and the encouragement of hawkers."

"A curse light on all thy designs," quoth the Sun, "for so impudently blaspheming against our power. Were it permitted me, as I am the Sun, I would swelter thee with heat, scorch thee with my rays, and make thee run mad with the headach." "Go dry up the dirt," said Fortune, "ripen cucumbers, furnish plagues for the good physicians, and assist those that lose themselves at thy light; remember your son was burnt to death like a heretic, therefore be silent hereafter, and let those speak to whom it belongs." Then Jove, with all his gravity, uttered these words: "Fortune, both you, and that impudent wench thy servant are much in the right in many things you have said; however, for the general satisfaction of all peo-

"ple, it is irrecoverably decreed, that on the
"same day and hour throughout the whole world,
"every man be put into those circumstances he
"justly deserves. This must be, therefore ap-
"point the day and the hour!" Fortune replied.
"To what purpose is it to delay what must be?
"let it be to-day, let us know what time of the
"day it is." The Sun, who is the standard of
all clockmakers, answered, "This is the 20th
"of June, as to the time of the day, it is three
"quarters and six minutes after twelve." "Mind
"then," quoth Fortune, "and as soon as it strikes
"four, you shall see how affairs go upon earth."
Then falling to work, she began to grease the
axletree of her wheel, to settle the spokes, re-
move the nails, and entangle several cords, slack-
ening some, and straining others, till the Sun
cried out, and said, "It is just four, neither over
"nor under, for this very instant I have brought
"the shade of the gnomons of all clocks upon
"the fourth postmeridian line." No sooner had
he uttered these words, than Fortune, as if she
had been playing on a cymbal, began to un-
wind her wheel, which whirling about like a
hurricane, huddled all the world into an un-
paralleled confusion. Fortune gave a mighty
squeak, saying, "Fly wheel, and the devil drive
"thee."

That very moment, a physician riding along on his mule, a snail's gallop in pursuit of diseases, was surpris'd by the wonderful influence of that hour, which was to give all men their due, and on a sudden he found himself in the posture of a hangman, with his legs across the shoulders of his patient, crying, Credo instead of Recipe, as if he had been going to turn him off the ladder.

At a small distance followed, in the same street, a criminal that was whipped, the crier before proclaiming his misdemeanors, the hangman behind lashing him, he riding upon an ass, and naked from the waist upward like a galley slave. This was his posture at the striking of the clock, which was no sooner over, but the horse the * alguazil rid on, threw him, and the ass the criminal; the horse took up the criminal, and the ass the alguazil; and thus having changed stations, he began to be lashed who before attended the execution; and he to attend who before was lashed. The † scribe alighted to set all again to rights, and taking out his pen, it grew

* Alguazil is an officer in Spain that apprehends criminals, and attends the execution of justice. Criminals in Spain, are carried to the gallows, and whipped upon an ass.

† The scribe, in Spanish, *escrivano*, is a sort of clerk, almost inseparable from the alguazil.

out into a galley-oar, and instead of writing, he began to row.

The scavengers carts passing through another street at the first moment of the hour, stopped before an apothecary's shop, and on a sudden all the dirt began to fly out of the cart into the shop, whence the pots and glasses leaped out into the carts with wonderful noise and confusion. But the dirt and the pots meeting, as the one went in and other out, it was observed, that the dirt very squeamishly cried out, "Keep off." Meanwhile the dustmen were not idle, but with their brooms and shovels swept together and threw up into the carts heaps of painted whores, pocky beaux, and powdered fops.

* A certain notorious knave had built a sumptuous house, not much inferior to a palace, with a stately porch, and over it a noble coat of arms cut in stone, and an inscription as if he had been of some considerable family. The owner was an errant thief, who, under the shadow of his employ, had stole the whole cost of the fabric. He was then in the house, and at the door was a bill signifying three apartments were there to be let. The hour came, O good God, who can express such a prodigy? Every stone, every brick in the whole structure, fell asunder, the tiles flew, some to the top of one house, and

some to another, the rafters, doors and windows hurried into several houses, to the terror of the owners, who looked upon this restitution as the effects of an earthquake, and thought it was the end of the world. The iron bars and grates walked about the streets seeking whom they belonged to. The arms that stood over the doors posted away to a country gentleman's seat, whence this cursed villain pretended himself to be descended. The rogue himself stripped of his fabric, was left alone at the corner of a street, with only the bill upon him which had been at the door, but so changed, that whereas before the purport of it was, "This house is to be let unfurnished, inquire within of the landlord:" Now it was, "This thief is to be let unfurnished, whosoever will hire him, may come in without knocking, since the house does not hinder it."

Opposite to this man lived a pawnbroker, who seeing his neighbour's house vanish, thought to secure himself, saying, "The houses remove from their landlords, this is a base invention." But though he used the utmost diligence to secure himself, the hour was come, and on a sudden an escritoir, a silver table, and a rich hanging which he kept in captivity, being pawned to him, flew from the walls with such violence,

that a piece of the hangings in its way to the window, wound itself about him, and carried him through the air above an hundred paces, where he dropped on the top of a house, not without some bruises. From thence, to his unspeakable grief, he saw all he had hurried away to the right owners. After all the rest came out the letters of * nobility, upon which he had lent a sum of money to the gentlemen they belonged to, for two months, on condition to receive five and twenty per cent. interest for that short time. These letters, to his astonishment, as they passed by him, said, "Thou barbarous tyrant over pawns, if our master, for our sake, cannot be arrested for debt, what reason can you show, to keep us in prison?" This said, they leaped into a cook's shop, where the gentleman that owned them sat with a hungry belly, envying every bit he saw another put into his mouth.

An eternal talker, who lavished as many words, as would have furnished half a score intolerable babblers, and whose tongue seemed to be the perpetual motion so long sought after, was busy in confounding his whole neighbourhood with the overflowing of his clack; when,

* In Spain gentlemen take out their letters of nobility, which, whosoever can show, is free from arrests.

on a sudden, the bowl being come, his tongue was tied up, and he struggling to run on, only stuttered and stammered the same syllables over, without end; and finding his mouth stopped, his very eyes and ears seemed to forget their own office, and burst out into talk and clamour.

Five judges were sitting on the bench upon a trial; one of them, merely out of all nature, was projecting how he might cast both parties. Another being a downright ignorant, and understanding nothing of the matter, was resolved to give his opinion, as all blockheads do, at a venture. The third, a doating old fellow, who had slept most part of the trial, giving judgment, like Pilate's wife, by dreams, was considering with which of his fellows he should close in opinion at random. The fourth, who was a learned and upright judge, sat like a cypher next to the last, who being corrupted with bribes, strained the sense of the law, and drew over to his party the other three; but at the very instant of giving judgment the hour commenced, and instead of saying, "The court is of opinion that such a one is cast and condemned," he said, "The court does award that we be damned, and accordingly we are damned." "Be the sentence fulfilled," said an unknown voice. In a moment their gowns were converted into

snake-skins, and they falling together by the ears, soon stripped one another's face; every one carrying away his neighbour's beard, to show that their judgment lay in their fingers and not in their heads.

A matchmaker was busy intruding in honest man's brain, who being weary of a quiet life and a good estate, was thinking to marry. He proposed to him a consummate girl, and set her off in this manner: "Sir, I will not commend her birth, because, God be praised, you have quality enough to bestow on her; as for riches, you are plentifully provided; beauty in a wife is a thing of dangerous consequence; as for matter of judgment, it is you that are to govern her, and you do not take her for a counsellor; ill humours she is not troubled with; her years are but few (yet he meant she had but few to live); she has all the other good qualities you could wish." The poor man in a passion cried out, "Thou accursed devil, what other good qualities can she have, since you own she is neither well born, rich, beautiful, nor discreet; and all you can say for her is, that she is not ill natured." Scarce had he done when the hour began, and the cursed matchmaker, who acts the tailor at weddings, stealing, lying, cheating, patching, and

piecing, found himself married to the monster he would have vamped upon the other man; and the new couple falling upon one another, went off kicking and scratching, and crying by turns, "Who are you? What fortune did you bring? You are not worthy to wipe my shoes." *to which said observations*

A poet having seated himself among an assembly of wits, was reading to them a pedantic obscure poem of his own composing, so stuffed with Latinisms, so cramped with synopses, so entangled with parenthesis, and so perplexed with smiles and allusions, that none of the company could find either head or tail to it. Upon the turn of the hour he had gone half way through his jargon, or confusion of languages, and all the hearers pressing upon him to pick out, if possible, some meaning from that chaos of hard words, one of them who held a candle in his hand to inform himself the better by overlooking the paper, put it so close that the unfortunate poem took fire. The poet stamped and tore his hair, seeing all his labour condemned to the flames; but he that had fired it pacified him, saying, "These verses are like old tarnished silver lace, they must be first burnt, and then perhaps you may separate the pure metal from the dross." *and said again*

A topping whore sailing out of her lodging with a mighty fardingale, so large she could scarce crowd through her narrow entry, and filling both sides of the street with the vast compass of her coats, was overtaken by the first minute of the all-ruling hour, and on a sudden being fet upon her head, appeared like a bell inverted. Here was discovered a vast fardel of rags that composed a rump-roll, with a piece of tapestry hanging rolled up to set out her hips, which in the turn loosening, and falling over her belly, there appeared at the bottom of it an Holofernes's head. The whole street was alarmed with the shouts of the rabble that beheld her. She shrieked, but her voice being drowned in the labyrinth of her petticoats fallen about her head, the noise sounded as if it came out from a deep cavern. She had certainly been stifled in the crowd, but that at the same time a beau strutting along the street with false calves, and three false teeth; and two dotards with their gray hair, and beards coloured black; and three old bald-pated fellows that wore periwigs; were all surprised by the influence of that hour. The beau feeling his calves sink away, thought to cry for help, believing his legs would be stolen; but at the first motion of his tongue, out drops his teeth. The dotards

beards and hair became as gray as a badger, so that they scarce knew one another; and the bald fellows periwigs flew away with their hats, leaving them nothing but the whiskers.

A certain nobleman had a favourite domestic who devoured his substance; this domestic was cheated by his servant, the servant by his man, the man by his friend, the friend by his wench, and the wench was deluded by the devil. Now the hour being come, the devil, who seemed to be at such a distance from the lord, seizes upon the whore, the whore on her spark, the spark on the man, the man on the servant, the servant on his master, and the master on his lord, and the devil possessing him, in a hellish rage he falls upon his domestic, the domestic on his servant, the servant on his man, the man on his friend, the friend on his whore, and she laid about them all; and thus exaggerated by furies, they tore one another to pieces. All their frauds and villanies were laid open, and the devil, who had managed the whole contrivance without discovery, swept them away all in a cluster.

A rich married woman sat at her dressing-table, plastering up her wrinkled freckly skin, sleeking her weather-beaten forehead, drawing eyebrows with a pencil, colouring her decayed

cheeks with Spanish wool, and dyeing her pale lips of a lively cherry colour. By her, as an assistant, kneeled a decrepid old governante like a skeleton, dressed up, holding a tour of an extraordinary magnitude. Next to her stood a young chambermaid, yet a novice at the trade of daubing, and in her hands a pair of iron bolstered bodice, contrived to rectify two mighty excrescences that discomposed the figure of the body. In this posture sat the lady confounding and shaming her very looking-glass, when the hour commenced, and she, led by the powerful influence thereof, began to lay about her, applying the white-wash to her hair, the black lead to her teeth, the red to her eyebrows and forehead, clapping the tower on her jaws, and lacing on the bolstered bodice the wrong way. Thus in a moment she was converted into a scarecrow, with a curled beard, and four hunches more ghastly and frightful than a hobgoblin. The governante thinking she was distracted, started up, and fled with might and main; the chambermaid swooned away, as if she had seen the devil; and the lady enraged in that horrible posture scoured after the governante. The noise brought the husband, who seeing his wife, thought she was possessed by some malignant

spirit, and ran with speed to call a priest to apply exorcisms to her.

A sovereign prince resolved to be present himself at a gaol delivery, being informed that his officers made the prison their market, where they bought and sold crimes and criminals at all sorts of rates and prices, exchanging robbers for gold, and murderers for ready money. He ordered the prisoners to be brought before him, and found they had been apprehended for the crimes they had committed, but were detained through the avarice of their keepers, who computed what some had and might have stolen, and what others had or might have of their own; so that their cause was depending as long as their stock lasted, and the day it expired was the day they were punished; it being plain they were apprehended for the ill they had done, and executed for what they had not. Amongst the rest were two condemned to be hanged the next day. One of these having compounded with his adversary, was kept as a prisoner at large. The other they designed to hang for robbing, after having been three years a prisoner, during which time they had devoured all he stole, and all he was worth. Thus far had this prince proceeded when the hour commenced,

and he turning pale with anger, said, " This
" man you designed to discharge, because he
" has compounded with his adversary, shall be
" hanged to-morrow; for the contrary would
" be exposing lives to sale, and the price of buy-
" ing off an appeal would prove the purchase
" of blood; so that pardons for murder being to
" be bought, a rate would be set upon every
" man's life, and thus all examples of justice
" would cease, it being an easy matter to per-
" suade the appellant that a thousand or five
" hundred crowns will do him more good than
" the hanging of his enemy. There are two
" parties concerned in all public offences, viz.
" justice, and the person offended; and it is no
" less necessary that the former should punish,
" than that the latter should forgive. This
" thief, whom after three years imprisonment
" you intended to hang, shall be discharged;
" for as it had been justice to have hanged him
" three years ago, so now it would be a barba-
" rous wrong, because in him you would hang
" his father, wife, and children, who are inno-
" cent, and whose substance, by these delays,
" you have devoured. I remember a story of
" a man, who, enraged that the mice gnawed
" his papers, crusts of bread, parings of cheese,
" and old shoes, took in cats to destroy the

“mice ; but perceiving the cats not only eat
“the mice, but stole his meat out of the pot,
“and tore it off the spit, that one day they
“spoiled a fowl, and another a whole joint of
“meat, he killed the cats, and said, ‘The mice
“for my money.’ Do you apply the moral of
“this fable, since you, like devouring cats, in-
“stead of cleansing the state from vermine, do
“catch and eat the thieves, who are little mice,
“that pick a pocket, cut a purse, snatch a hat,
“or steal a cloak ; and at the same time you
“waste the country, consume estates, and de-
“stroy whole families.” This said, he ordered
all the prisoners to be discharged, and the offi-
cers to be apprehended. There was a wonder-
ful noise and confusion, those lamented who
before were inexorable ; and the prisoners load-
ed those with fetters and chains, who before
had fettered them.

Several women appeared in the street, some
of them afoot ; and though many were well
stricken in years, they tripped it along like
young girls, proud of their little feet and white
petticoats. Others dressed like Bartholomew
babies, and set up on glass cupboards, or sedans,
carried by greasy fellows, the farthest prospect of
the ladies eyes, being the neighbouring haunch-
es of the foremost, and the next perfume of their

noses, proceeded from his sweaty feet, which being free from socks, sent a most fragrant smell: As gay as young girls, striving to be taken for such, concealing their age as they would their shame, and ogling with those eyes that were ready to sink into their heads. Upon the very entrance of the hour, they were met by a pack of ancient astrologers, with their ephemerides in their hands, who presently attacked them, to fix upon every one the date of her life, to the very year, day, hour, minute, and second, of their nativity. These conjurers set up a cry, "Own your age, ye wretches, since it is your doom, you are forty-two years old, two months, five days, two hours, nine minutes, and twenty seconds," says one of the astrologers to one of the ladies. Good God! who can express the terrible shrieks she raised; all that could be understood was, "You lie, 'tis false, I am not fifteen; Lord, what a rogue is this to say such a thing." Another cried, "I am not eighteen;" a third, "I am but thirteen;" "I am a mere child, an infant," cries another. The astrologer was writing her age upon the back of one, as if it had been a bill upon a door; and it was to this effect: "This woman was born into the world in the year 1629." She perceiving by this means it

would appear she was sixty-seven years of age, all in a rage cried out, "Thou old doating emblem of death, I am but just come into the world, my teeth are not all cut." "Thou decayed piece of antiquity," replied he, "teeth will never spring under old stumps; look up on your date." "I'll own no date;" quoth she, and thus falling together by the ears, the controversy ended in a wonderful confusion.

After a sumptuous dinner, a mighty potentate sat lulling his pride with the false flatteries of his servants. A grumbling noise resounded from his crammed guts, which could not agree in the cooks-shop of his belly, with the strange medley of varieties he had devoured. He foamed at the mouth, the wine boiling over, and his whole face was inflamed and bloated with the exhalation of his stomach. At each word he uttered, though never so stupid, the standers by, like men in a frenzy, poured out superlative encomiums. An admirable sentence, cried one; nothing could be expressed finer, says another; most incomparable words, says a third; and, lastly, a parasite, who laboured to out-flatter all the rest, straining a lie to the utmost pitch, exclaims, Learning itself stands amazed to hear you, and even admiration is outdone. The great man strutting, and fetching up two or

three gulps, the forerunners of a vomit, drivelled out these words: "I am much concerned for the loss of my two ships." Immediately the parasites renewed their flatteries, and romancing without measure, one of them replied, That that loss redounded to his honour; that it fell out as could have been wished; and nothing could have happened more opportunely, since it administered an opportunity of falling out with his neighbours, from whom he might take two hundred in lieu of those two, which might easily be compassed. To prove this, the false flatterer produced many examples. Another said, That loss was the greatest testimony of his grandeur, for only he was a great prince who had much to lose; that losing was a better demonstration of power than gaining and acquiring, which were the practice of pirates and robbers: That damage sustained, he added, would be the enriching of him, and then began to fill his ears with sentences out of Tacitus, Sallust, Polybius, Thucydides, and other authors, representing the vast losses of the Greeks and Romans, and a thousand other extravagancies. The mighty glutton, who only studied how to excuse his sloth, took these falsehoods as full satisfaction for his loss. The devil himself could not have contrived a better way to infatuate

him. At this time the crudity of his stomach, for want of digestion, cast up a belch, which made the room to echo. No sooner had the cursed parasites heard it, than kneeling down to make him believe he had sneezed, they unanimously said, "God bless you." That very minute began the hour, and the great man raving as if exaggerated by furies, cried out, "Villains, 'since you would impose upon me so far as to "make a belch pass for a sneeze, though my "mouth and my nose are so close together, "what can I expect you would do in those "things I neither see nor smell." Then shaking his hands about his ears, as if he were driving away their lies, he ran to them, and kicked them out of the palace, saying, "Had those "fellows come upon me when I had a cold, "they had utterly undone me; one sense that "was left me proved their ruin, there is no "greater happiness than smelling!"

The misers, warned by costly experience, separate themselves from the cheats; and these, rather than lose their trade, attacked one another, disguising their words, and counterfeiting plain dealing. Says one cheat to another, "Sir, "having paid dear for dealing with sharpers, "who have been my ruin, I come to you who "are no stranger to my honesty, to desire you

" will lend me 3000 royals in * brass, upon a
 " bill which is accepted and payable in silver
 " within two months; the party the bill is
 " drawn upon is so responsible, the money is as
 " good as if you had it in your pocket, and you
 " will have no further trouble than telling of
 " it." But the man on whom he gave the bill
 was the very sink of fraud and deceit. The
 sharper, who heard the other sharper commend-
 ing the third, pretended not to be acquainted
 with the qualifications of either, and arming
 himself with his own weapons, with a doleful
 deliberation, answered, That he was just then
 come abroad to borrow 4000 royals upon a pawn
 that was worth eight. They all accosted one
 another with gilt chains that were to pass for
 gold, counterfeit bills that were accepted, sham
 securities, false notes, plate they borrowed for a
 feast, and bits of glass and Bristol stones under
 the title of diamonds. It was wonderful to
 hear the discourse that passed betwixt them.
 One said, "Honesty is the best policy, and plain-
 " dealing is a jewel. I had rather die in a ditch
 " than do a base thing. I stand upon my re-
 " putation; it is a great blessing not to be

* There are such quantities of copper-money in Spain, that
 great sums are often paid in it, and great consideration is al-
 lowed for payments in gold or silver.

"afraid to show one's face; this has been my
"education from my cradle." Another of the
cheats answered, "There is nothing like keep-
"ing touch; an honest man's word is as good
"as his bond; I never desired ill-gotten riches;
"I will have nothing that may require restitu-
"tion; my soul is more precious to me than
"all the world; I would not be guilty of one
"cheat for all the riches in the earth; I value
"my conscience above all the universe con-
"tains." Thus were these dissemblers disgui-
sing their sly designs with fair speeches, when
the hour came upon them; and every sharper
believing his companion, they all ruined one
another. He that had the the false chain gave
it for the counterfeit bill; he that showed the
glass diamonds exchanged them for the bor-
rowed plate. The one ran to the goldsmith,
the other with his bill to the banker, to com-
pound for half in ready money, before the
cheat of the chain was discovered. The bank-
er told him the bill was not his, neither did he
know any such man, and sent him away with
a flea in his ear. Away slunk the sharper with
his bill instead of his tail betwixt his legs, say-
ing, "O dog, what a trick had he served me,
"but that the chain was made of old iron."
He that parted with the false diamonds for the

plate, being at the goldsmith's, selling it for less than the weight, rejoiced to think how he had bubbled the other with bits of glass. In comes the right owner, and seeing his plate swing in the scale, calls an alguazil, and seizes the cheat for a thief, and they fell together by the ears. At the noise out runs he with the false diamonds: He that was selling the plate, cried out, "That rogue sold it to me." The other answered, "He lies, he stole it from me." The goldsmith cried, "That scoundrel would have sold me pebbles for diamonds." The owner of the plate was for seizing them both; the scribe was for securing them all three till the matter was decided. The alguazil seized the two cheats, and the scribe led the owner of the plate by the cloak. After the rogues had well buffeted one another, and thus well attended by the mob, they were led to gaol, and there put into custody of the hangman's master of the wardrobe.

There is a small island on the coast of Denmark, in which there are five towns. The lord of this place was very poor, rather because he coveted much, than that he wanted for any thing. God had afflicted the inhabitants with a general inclination in them all to be projectors, so that the land seemed to be infested with

as many monsters as there were men. All the neighbouring people shunned these islanders as they would the plague, for the very air that came from them was so contagious, it consumed their stocks, blasted their fields, wasted their treasure, and ruined their trade. So prodigious was the natural proneness to projecting in that country, that the very sucking babes, instead of daddy and mammy, cried out nothing but Project. The whole island was a confused chaos, for man and wife, father and son, neighbour and neighbour, were ever jangling and bawling about their projects; and they were as intoxicated with them, as if they had been drunk with wine. The lord of this place (avarice, which is one of the worst devils that distracts the world, having gained the ascendant over him) ordered a general gathering of projects. Legions of projectors assembled before his palace, with scrips and scrolls of paper stuck in their girdles, and run through their button-holes, and peeping out of their pockets. The lord having made known his wants, demanded their assistance, and they all at once laying hold of their papers, and crowding till they had almost stifled one another, in an instant heaped up four tables with their memoirs. The hurry being somewhat over, he began to look over

them. The first paper he opened was entitled to this effect, "A project for getting an infinite quantity of silver and gold, without asking it, or taking it from any body." A difficult proposition in my mind, says the lord. The second, "How to gather unmeasurable treasure by taking it from all men, and enriching them by taking it away." The first, quoth the lord, of taking from all men, I like; but as to the second, which is to enrich them by taking it from them, I am dubious, yet let them look to that. The third, "An easy, pleasing, and just project for amassing of many millions, in such manner, that they who are to pay them shall not miss them, but rather think they are bestowed on them." This I approve of, leaving the persuasive part to the projector. The fourth project undertakes to make what is deficient to superabound, without adding any thing, or taking away, and without giving any body cause of complaint. A project so inoffensive can have nothing of truth in it. The fifth, which offers to furnish all that shall be desired, directs to take by fair and foul means, and to ask of all men, and they will give themselves to the devil. This project, having to do with the devil, seemed practicable. The author encouraged by this approbation, added, "And I pro-

"pose, that those who levy it, shall be a comfort to them who suffer by it." The devil put it into his head to let slip that word; furies possess the projectors, who thunder out reproaches against him, calling him sot and dog, and crying, "Thou scoundrel, hell itself could never have proposed a comfort in tax-gatherers, they themselves being the greatest of grievances." They called one another sons of projectors, as it had been sons of whores, condemning one another's proposals, and each approving only of his own. In the height of this fray, many of the lord's servants came running, and crying, the palace was on fire in three several places, and the wind blew high. Just then began the hour, the smoke was great, and the flame ascended. The lord, in that consternation, knew not which way to turn himself. The projectors bid him sit still, and they would set all to rights in a moment; and rushing out from his presence, some laid hands on all they found in the house, casting the cabinets, tables, glasses, and all that was of value, out at the windows; others with sledges overthrew a tower; others saying, the fire would cease as soon as it had vent, uncovered a great part of the house, breaking down the roofs, and destroying all that stood in their way. None of them went about

to quench the fire, but all were employed in pulling down the house, and confounding all that was in it. The lord seeing the smoke decrease, went out, and found that the common people, with his officers and servants, had overcome the fire, yet at the same time perceiving that the projectors were tearing up the very foundations, had demolished his palace, and spoiled all his furniture. Incensed and raging at this hideous sight, he cried out, "Dogs, you
 " are worse than the fire, and such are all your
 " projects; it were better I had been burnt
 " than to have given ear to you, so destructive
 " are all the remedies you apply. You over-
 " turn a whole house, for fear a corner of it
 " should fall, and throw the best goods into
 " the street, pretending to save them. You
 " feed a prince with his own limbs, and pretend
 " to maintain him, when at the same time he is
 " devouring himself. Villains, justly did the
 " fire come to burn me, for gathering and suf-
 " fering you to live; but when it perceived me
 " in the power of projectors it ceased, conclu-
 " ding I was already consumed. Fire is the
 " most merciful of projectors, for water quenches
 " it, but you increase in spite of all the elements.
 " Antichrist will be a projector, and shall burn
 " you all alive, and keep your ashes to make

"ley, to wash out the stains of all common-
wealths."

The bawds and whores had gathered a wicked council, where they railed at the purses they could not come at, and spoke ill of money that was out of their reach. The antientest of the bawds, mumbling her words betwixt her gums, with a hollow tone, proceeding from the want of teeth, grunted out these words to the assembly: "The world is now at the last gasp; it is a starving age; things are at the worst; fairings and new-years gifts are long since out of date; love-offerings are scarce remembered; money is come to that pass nobody knows it, and it is vanished from our sight; a crown piece is shown about as if it were an elephant, and pistoles are styled of blessed memory. Promises have succeeded in the place of ready coin. A compliment with, you may rely upon my word, is the common stop gap, and an empty note passes for current cash. Your spruce beaux, with bushy wigs and long sword-knobs, will reduce you to a morsel of bread. Our business is to have and to hold, to seize the ready rhino, and to be paid beforehand. I recommend to you certain men that are half rotten, that live in the space betwixt dorage and the grave, that trim up a walking skele-

"ton, and lay up for no heir but their luxury;
"paying well for the weakness of their limbs.
"Interest takes away all squeamishness; shut
"your eyes, and stop your noses, as if you were
"swallowing a purge; a bitter draught is some-
"times a wholesome medicine. Make account
"that you burn old lace for the silver, or suck
"a bone to get out the marrow. I have half a
"dozen of dry old dotards, who spit pieces of
"eight for every one of you. I do not desire
"the thirds, but shall be satisfied with some
"small allowance to keep up that reputation I
"have preserved all my life." She said, and
closing her chin with the tip of her nose, made
a face like a nut-cracker. One of the young
harpies replied, "Thou antiquated contriver of
"delight, coupler of male and female, tacker of
"nations, joiner of giblets, and counterfeiter of
"faces, consider we are too young to be sold to
"impotent curmudgeons; make use of your
"rhetoric among the decayed governantes, who
"are but walking carcases playing about the
"grave, as butterflies do about a candle, till
"they drop into it. Young blood is more in-
"clined to the flesh than to money, and prefers
"pleasure before riches; therefore let me ad-
"vise you to choose some other trade, for qua-
"lity has now taken up that of hawding, and I

"hope to see rotten eggs thrown at their coaches instead of the pillory." Scarce had the night-walker spoke the last word, when the hour began, and a whole shoal of creditors rushing in, fell upon them. The landlord seized the beds and hangings for house rent, the upholsterer their clothes for the hire of his goods, till both, with a hideous noise, fell foul of each other. At the same time a broker puts in for his clothes. The wenches shrieked, calling them rude unmannerly fellows, threatening what they would do, and swearing they would never put up such an affront. The damned old bawd blessed herself with both hands, and roared as high as the loudest. In comes a bully to one of the jilts, and, without asking questions, draws his sword, and falls upon the creditors, calling them thieves and robbers. They drew, and in the fray overturned and broke all the goods in the room. The wenches ran to the windows, crying, "Help! Help! Murder! Murder!" At this summons up comes an alguazil with all his retinue, bidding them keep the king's peace. The broil grew hottest upon the stairs, till out they rushed into the street, some wounded, others with their clothes rent. The ruffian with a broken head, but without hat or cloak, took sanctuary in a church. The alguazil entered

the house, and seeing the old woman, laid violent hands on her, saying, "Art thou here still, old Belzebub, after having been thrice banished? Thou art the ringleader of all this mischief." Then seizing her with the young fry, and securing all they had, he drove them away half naked, with their hair about their ears, to gaol, all the rabble attending and shouting, "Away with the whores."

A counsellor at law, whose greatest learning lay in his grizly beard, like Sampson's strength in his hair, sat in a room better furnished with books than he was with conscience. His whole study was how to embroil his clients, not to consult his authors, and yet was so proud of his library, that being a mere ignoramus, it might truly be said, he knew not the value of it. He had gained a great reputation by his roaring voice, his moving gestures, and a wonderful fluency of tongue, wherewith he bore down all other lawyers. His chamber could scarce contain his clients, every one pressing forward to lay his case open, and empty his purse. All his answers were, "I am fully informed. I have studied the case. Your right is undeniable. It agrees with the express letter of the law. It is as clear as the day. There is no difficulty in this suit. It is a case adjudged. The law

"is directly on your side. It will easily be determined. The judges are for us. Your adversary has nothing to say for himself. All that has been done is void in itself. That judgment must be reversed. Be ruled by me." Some he ordered to petition, others to appeal, others to demur, others to put in their interrogatories, others to bring their writ of error, and others to suborn fresh witnesses. All that immense number of volumes was turned over, and nothing refounded but an unintelligible confusion of law-gibberish. The counsellor demanded his fee, the solicitor his due, the attorney his reward, the clerk his perquisites, and the scrivener his pay. Whilst they were in this debate, the hour began, and the clients, unanimously, as if it had been one man, cried out, "Good Mr. Sergeant, in all suits the adversary is the least of evils, for he sues at his own cost, and you plead for us at our own; and you the solicitor, the clerk, and the attorney, run away with our money. The adversary waits for judgment, and pursues upon an appeal, but you and your adherents give a definitive sentence in your own behalf. Our suit may go for and against us, but in the following of it we must of necessity be cast four times a-day; so that in the end we may obtain our right,

"but have lost our money. All those authors
"cannot persuade us, but it is a madness to
"spend what we have, to get what another man
"has, and perhaps be at last disappointed. We
"had rather have one adversary than five; for
"supposing the suit should go on our side, it
"will be when it has ruined us. Lawyers de-
"send their clients, as seamen do their ships in
"a storm, throwing over all they have, that, if
"it be God's will, they may be brought into
"their port empty. The best advice is to agree
"amongst ourselves; for by agreeing we shall
"save what you take from us. We are all go-
"ing to compound with our adversaries. Your
"best revenues arise out of our obstinacy, and if
"we, by compounding, should lose all we sued
"for, at least we shall gain all that you lose.
"We would advise you to put a bill upon your
"door; for we think it better to spend our
"money upon whores than lawyers; and for
"your part, since your only business has been
"to set men together by the ears, it will be your
"best course to turn soldier or statesmen."

The vintners, a perverse generation, who raise
the price of their wine, at the same rate that
they brew water, selling the rain disguised and
discoloured with floes, and the dregs of their
hogshheads, for the juice of the grape, were met

in a tavern to the number of six or seven, with as many bullies and highwaymen, and a quorum of draggle-tailed jilts, newly whipped out of bridewell, who danced themselves dry, and drank to dance again. The bumpers flew about like lightning, to the tune of three in a hand. "Delicate wine," quoth one of the sparks, perceiving the cheat, and winking upon the knave that was to pledge him. The other, who feared it would breed frogs in his belly, rather than send fumes into his brain, replied, "This is truly a rich wine, and we poor rogues; for the waters belong to the rich and not to the poor." The vintner hearing their flouts, called them fots, bidding them drink and hold their peace, "Drink and swim, you should have said," replied one of the good fellows. This minute began the hour, and the whole company growing mutinous, threw the pots and glasses at the vintner, crying, "Inhuman water-seller, we are more like drowned rats than drunkards, thou makest us pay by the quart for the river water thou bringest in by the hoghead." The vintner having nothing to say for himself, cried, "Water! Water!" as if his house had been a fire, and rolling his hogheads into the street, knocked out the heads of them, letting the liquor run down the channel.

A swarm of 32 candidates, all aiming at one employment, were waiting to speak with the nobleman in whose gift it was. Each of them fancied himself as deserving, as the rest unworthy of it. Every one blessed himself, and admired at the madness and impudence of the rest, for pretending to what he imagined to be due to him alone. They beheld one another with evil eyes, and hearts full of malice, and meditated how to slander and defame. Their looks were sour and starched, but their joints in continual motion. Every time the door creaked, they made a thousand bows on all hands, and as many submissive grimaces. Not so much as a page could pass by without a loving salute and kind look. The secretary happening to rush through the room, their submissions were so profound, as if they would have kissed the ground he trod on. He casting a glance like a shame-faced girl, pressed through, saying, "Excuse me gentlemen, I am now in haste." The nobleman called for his desk, and sat to despatch business, when upon a false alarm, thinking themselves summoned to appear, one of the candidates cries, "It is I;" another, "I come;" and others, "Here I am," crowding themselves to death against the door. The poor lord understanding what a peal of petitions attended him,

knew not which way to turn himself. He silently cursed himself, saying, "It was one of the
" greatest blessings in the world to have to give,
" provided there were none to ask; and that
" favours, that they might not be a plague to
" him that bestows them, ought to be freely offered, and never sued for." The dinners impatient of delay, wasted inwardly, considering there was but one employment, and the candidates were many. The lord considered he could please but one, and must disoblige 31; however, to be rid of them, he resolved they should be admitted, and in order to it, put on a stern countenance, and looked like a statue, that he might appear with more majesty. In they rushed in a crowd, and he perceiving they would all tongue-pad him at once, said, "There is but one employment, and you are a number, I would
" gladly bestow the place upon one, and satisfy
" you all." As he had dropped the last word the hour commenced, and the lord bestowing the employment upon one, entailed the reversion of it upon them all one after another, "world without end." The wretched presumptive heirs began to wish one another dead, praying for pleurifies, asthmas, consumptions, plagues, apoplexies, fluxes, sudden deaths, and all manner of disasters. Scarce were two minutes past

since the entail, when every man thought his predecessor had lived to the age of Methusalem; and though the tenth man computed his turn could not come till 300 years after, yet every man was pleased to wait the death of his predecessor. Only the 31st, finding by his reckoning that his turn fell out exactly with the end of the world, and after the coming of Antichrist, said, "My possession and the general conflagration hit exactly together, I shall make a fine business of my employment; when I am burnt at the day of judgment, who will oblige the dead to pay me my wages? For my part, I wish the 30th successor a long life, for when the employment comes to him, the world will be at the gasp." The lord left them striving to outlive and destroy one another, and went himself away in a passion, to see them protracting their ages beyond doomsday, and even coping with eternity. He that had carried the employment, stood amazed to consider what a long succession of heirs he had got, and at last slunk away, resolving to eat light suppers, and prevent taking cold. The rest looked upon one another as so many mutual plagues, and reciprocally cursing their lives, each fancied diseases in the other, and added to the number of his years; every successor threatening his forerunner with

death, giving him over as a gone man and withing him in the hands of physicians; which is the same as to be delivered up to the hangman.

A sort of men that borrow after the manner of the day that is past, never to return again, who snap at a purse, as a spider does at a fly that is entangled in her web, lie tumbling in bed till the evening for want of rags to cover their nakedness. Among them they had laid out half a crown they had mumped, in wafers, ink, pens, and paper, which they had consumed in begging-letters, all to the same effect, expressing how urgent the occasion was, their reputation lying at stake, and even their life, with assurances of a speedy return, and professions of eternal acknowledgment. However, in case they should not meet with money, they concluded with the *ne plus ultra* of impudent beggary, desiring, in case there was no ready cash, they would be pleased to send them something of value to pawn, which should be most carefully secured. By way of postscript, they begged pardon for the boldness, protesting they would not be so free with any other person. They had drawn about an hundred of these notes to be dispersed in all the corners of the town, whither they were conveyed by one of the fraternity, a notable sponger that had a

tongue well hung, and with his grave beard and long cloak, not a little resembled a well travelled mountebank. The herd of letter-beggars remained, computing how much money the messenger would bring, and a cursed noise there was about the sum. Nor did it stop here, for they wrangled about the laying it out, and having given one another the lie, at last they leaped out of their beds, with such fragments of shirts, that there was no occasion to take them up to discover their lower parts. In came their mumping post with an air that spoke no relief; both his hands were at liberty, and his arms open, which foreboded emptiness. All that appeared was a great bundle of notes. They all stood amazed, seeing their contrivance had ended in empty answers, and in a doleful tone said, "What have we got?" "No money," replied the poor scoundrel, "you may divert yourselves with reading, since you have no occasion of telling." They began to open the notes. The first was to this effect: "I was never so much concerned at any thing in all my life as my not being at present in a condition to serve you in a matter of so little value." "He might have served me (quoth the reader) and have had more cause to be concerned." The second note: "Sir, Had I received yours yester-

" day, I could have obliged you, and been
" proud of the occasion." " A curse of yester-
" day (says he) that is the daily plague of all
" mumpers." The third note : " It is such a
" miserable time." " O damned almanack ma-
" ker (cries the shark), we ask for money, and
" you tell us what weather it is." The fourth
note : " Sir, Your want cannot be so grievous
" to you, as to me it is that I cannot relieve
" you." " Who the devil told you so (exclaims
the poor wretch), " dost thou pretend to divi-
" nation, thou miser, and prophesy when you
" ought to give." " No more reading" (they
all cried), and making a hellish charm, they add-
ed, " It is now night, to make up what has
" been expended, let us gnaw the wafers off the
" letters for our supper, and sell these and two
" other parcels of notes we have by us to the
" confectioner, who will give at least four roy-
" als for them to paper up comfits, wrap sugar,
" and lay under biscuits in the oven." Says
the letter carrier, " This trade of borrowing has
" been out of the world these ten years. A
" man had better give what he asks, than en-
" dure the gestures and scurvy looks of those
" he accosts ; and if you calculate the whole,
" the expence of paper and shoes is greater than
" the profit ; your only way is to look out

"sharp." In this posture were the paper-mumpers when the hour began, and the lightest of equipage said, "We are very ceremonious with other men's money, and if we expect it should fly in at our windows, we may die in a ditch. Rhetoric is no good picklock, and fine words reach the ears, but not the pockets; to listen to one that begs, is the devil. It is much easier to take than to ask. When all men hoard, it is no time to wait their generosity. Our business is to steal barefaced, and with consideration, that is, considering we must steal in such manner, that there may be enough for the accuser, for the clerk, for the constable, for the attorney, for the solicitor, for the counsellor, for the jailor, for the judge, and for ourselves; for when what is stolen ends, the hangman begins. My friends, if they banish us, it is better than that they should bury us; if they pillory us, it breaks no bones; and as for the shame of it, none of our spectators have any; if they whip us, we may be content, for beggars must not be choosers, and at least we shall have the satisfaction of hearing our white skins commended; and as soon as the show is over, the doublet hides the lashes. If they put us upon the rack, we are in no danger, for all they en-

“deavour is to make us speak the truth, which
“we never do; therefore let us be like the tailors,
“and we are safe enough. To be sent to
“the galleys is only going into the king’s service
“with * a bald pate; and galley slaves serve
“only to supply the want of sails. If they hang
“us, which is the utmost extremity, that day
“twelvemonth will be a year; and every man
“that is hanged honours his parents, for though
“he be never so mean a scoundrel, the block-
“heads of the spectators say, He is very well
“born, and of a good family. Nay, if it were
“only for the pleasure of chousing the doctor
“and apothecary at one death, a man might be
“well enough pleased to die of the hempen
“disease.” Gentlemen, mind your hits. Scarce
were the last words out of his mouth, when
wrapping the sheets about them, and swallowing
the oil that was in a lamp, they let themselves
out of the window with a blanket into the
street, and away they scoured to search
chests, pick locks, and dive into pockets.

Two ruffians were brought to the gallows for
half a dozen murders. One of them had already
taken his swing, and the other was mounted
on the ladder, with the hangman astride over
his shoulders. Among the crowd of spectators,

* The galley slaves have always their heads shaved.

two physicians, riding after fevers and plagues, made a halt, and beholding the criminals, began to weep like children, with such a deluge of tears, that the people about them asked whether those that suffered were their sons. They answered, That they did not know them, but wept to see men die without paying any thing to the faculty. That moment began the hour, and the criminal spying the doctors, said, "Gentlemen of the faculty, here is room for you, if you please, for you have killed enough to deserve my place, and your skill in despatching men renders you worthy of the hangman's. Galen and Hippocrates must not send all to the grave, hemp is as effectual as an aphorism. Those mules that carry you about to commit so many murders, are no better than ladders to mount you to the gallows. This is a time to speak truth; had I used the *recipe* instead of the *dagger*, I had not come to this end, though I had massacred all the spectators. I beg a dozen masses for my soul, which you may easily soist into one of the wills you forward."

A cheating gamester was at play with a sharpening bully, upon tick, as believing it the way to draw him in deeper than if the money had lain upon the table, and scored the loss

with counters. He packed the cards, having let him win something at first, the better to secure him, and now and then gave him a tolerable hand, but then fetched it back with interest; so that the bully ran down apace, yet not without being very sensible of what was put upon him. The hour came upon them, and the gamester reckoning his counters, said, "Sir, you owe me two hundred crowns." The bully counting them over again, as if he had designed to pay, answered, "Good Sir, I must confess you are an absolute master at your trade, and have as much sleight of hand as any juggler, but you have not learned my trick yet, which is, never to pay what I lose; add that to the rest, and you'll be complete. You may reckon you played for nothing, and that all we have lost will be our time, and that neither of us can recover."

A lean ragged chemist, who looked as if he had extracted the juice out of his flesh, and caltined his clothes, had wheedled a miser to give ear to him, as he stood at a man's door who sold charcoal, and was telling him, "I am a natural philosopher, and by the grace of God a chemist. I have found the philosophers stone, which is a medicine of life, and produces a transcendant transmutation infinitely multipli-

" cable ; for with the powder of this stone, by
 " projection, I turn into the purest and most re-
 " fined gold, quicksilver, iron, lead, tin, and sil-
 " ver. I can make gold of grass, eggshells,
 " hair, blood, piss, and of the very dirt. This
 " I can do in a few days, and with small ex-
 " pence. I dare not discover myself to any bo-
 " dy, because if the king should hear of it, he
 " would clap me into gaol to save India voy-
 " ages and the trouble of digging in the mines.
 " I know you to be a person of discretion, qua-
 " lity, and worth, and therefore have resolved
 " to trust you with a secret of such importance,
 " and so admirable, that in a few days it will
 " make you master of millions." The miser lis-
 " tened to him with a greedy ear, and so wrapt
 " in contemplation of the millions, that his fingers
 " wagged for eagerness of telling them. His avarice
 " could not contain itself within bounds, but
 " gushed out at his eyes, and he had in his imagi-
 " nation already converted his fryingpans, spits,
 " kettles, and candlesticks, into bars of gold. He
 " asked what would be the charge of the opera-
 " tion? the chemist replied, " Little or nothing,
 " for fifty crowns was enough to convert all the
 " world into gold and silver, because the great-
 " est expence would be in limbeckes and cruci-
 " bles; for the elixir, which is the vivifying spi-

“fit of gold, would cost nothing, and might be
“had gratis everywhere; neither should a far-
“thing be spent in charcoal, because he subli-
“mated, digested, separated, rectified, and cir-
“culated all with lime and dung.” The coal-
man was listening to this tale of a tub, fretting
to hear him say he would use no charcoal; but
just then began the hour, and the coalman, well
powdered with charcoal dust, and smelling of
the devil’s perfume, falls upon the chemist, say-
ing, “Thou vagabond, scoundrel, rascal, why
“dost thou feed up that honest man with ima-
“ginary gold?” The chemist in a fury gave
him the lie, which the coalman so readily an-
swered with a cuff, it was scarce discernible
which was first. They both fell to loggerheads,
and in a trice the chemist’s battered nose ran
like a limbeck. The miser could not part
them; not daring to meddle because of the dust
and smoot. They stuck so close to one ano-
ther, it was impossible to discern which was the
coalman, or who had smooted the other. At
length they were parted by the people that pas-
sed by, but in such a condition, they looked as
if they had been rolled in lampblack, and
trimmed with snuffs of candles. Says the char-
coal-man, “This poor devil tells thee he’ll
“make gold of dirt and old iron, and at the

“same time his clothes are all in tatters, and
“he looks as if he had been robbing the rag-
“woman. I know these fellows, for one of
“them cheated a neighbour of mine, and made
“him lay out at my own house at least a thou-
“sand crowns in coals only, and that in the
“space of two months, telling him he would
“make gold, and he only made smoke and
“ashes, but at last ran away with all he had.”
“But I (quoth the chemist) will perform what
“I undertake; and since you make gold and
“silver of coals, and of the stones, dirt and rub-
“bish you throw among them, and of the cheats
“of your weight, why may not I, with my art,
“and the assistance of Rualdus, Geber, Avicen,
“Morienu, Hermes, Vulfstadius, Crolius, Liba-
“vius, and Hermes’s samaragdine table, make
“gold as well as you.” The charcoal-man in
a fume reply’d, “Because all those authors make
“you mad, and you make him that believes
“you a beggar. I sell coals, and you burn them,
“which is the reason I convert them into gold
“and silver, and you turn them into soot. The
“true philosopher’s stone is to buy cheap and
“sell dear, and a pox on all your catalogue of
“hard names. I declare I would with more sa-
“tisfaction freely give my coals to burn you
“with all your papers, than sell them for ready

" money. As for you, Sir, you may make ac-
" count, that this day you became master of
" your money, and if you desire to increase it,
" trade is the only thing that multiplies coin,
" and makes one pistole in a month produce
" another. But if you are weary of your bags,
" empty them into a house of office, and when-
" soever you repent, you may take them out
" with more ease and cleanness, than ever you
" will recover them from the bellows and distil-
" lation of this miserable wretch, who being
" himself a mere ragamuffin, pretends to outdo
" the treasures of India, and defy the mines of
" Potosi."

Three Frenchmen were travelling into Spain over the mountains of Biscay; one of them trundled before him a wheel with the implements for grinding knives and scissors; another carried before and behind two great fardles of bellows and mouse-traps; and the third had a box of combs and pins. A poor Spaniard, who was travelling into France afoot, with his cloak on his shoulder, met them about half way in the ascent of a craggy steep hill. They sat down to rest in the shade, and began to confer notes. The Spaniard being asked, " Whither
" he travelled?" answered, " He was going to
" France, being fled from justice for some un-

" lucky pranks ; that thence he would go into
" Flanders to appease the judges, and gain ho-
" nour in his king's service, because a Spaniard
" out of his own country could not serve any
" other master." Being again asked, " How it
" came he had no trade or handicraft to main-
" tain him in that long journey ?" he replied,
" The Spaniards had no trade but war ; that
" those who were poor and honest borrowed or
" begged by the way ; and those that were not
" so, robbed, as they did in all other countries." Moreover, he said, " He admired they travelled
" from France through strange countries and
" desolate mountains with their goods, being al-
" ways in danger of falling into the hands of
" highwaymen. He desired they would inform
" him what moved them to leave their country,
" and what profit they could propose to them-
" selves in that lumber they were loaded with,
" which at a distance made them look so fright-
" ful, and put travellers into a quandary to de-
" termine what they were." The grinder, who
flammered the best Spanish of the three, said,
" We are gentlemen disgusted at the king of
" France, and have lost our fortunes by being
" malecontents ; but I have made three journeys
" into Spain, where, with this wheel and these
" stones, I have gathered many Spanish pistoles,

"which you call Doubloons?" The Spaniard, with a sour look, replied, "Much good may do the king of France with his faculty of curing the evil, if he suffers grinders and pedlars to be malecontents." Quoth the grinder, "You ought to look upon us grinders as a land fleet, for with these stones we sharpen and wear away your bars of gold more than your knives and scissors; take notice of this cracked pot that drivels out the water; this serves us to convey home our plate, without being exposed to the troubles of the sea, and dangers of storms; these wheels, instead of sails, carry us into all parts, and being dispersed through all countries with our grindstones, combs, and pins, we gently draw after us the revenues of your Indian mines; and you may be sure it is no small treasure that France catches in its mouse-traps, and sucks in with its bellows." "Swoons," saith the Spaniard, "though I knew not all this, yet I could easily perceive your bellows blew away our money, and your traps increased your stock, but diminished not our mice; and I have observed, that ever since you sold bellows, we spend more coals, and our pots boil never the better; that since you bring us traps, we are devoured by rats and mice; that since you grind, all our tools rust,

"wear, notch, and grow dull; and that in
 "grinding our knives you spoil them, that we
 "may have occasion to buy more of you. I
 "am now convinced you Frenchmen are the
 "lice that devour all parts of Spain; that you
 "bite us with the teeth of your combs, and
 "grind us with your stones; nor do I think
 "that scratching is any remedy against this
 "itching, but that it increases it, and makes us
 "tear ourselves to pieces with our own fingers.
 "I hope in God I shall soon return, and then
 "will make it known there is no remedy against
 "this itch, but picking you out, and pressing
 "you to death. What shall I say of your
 "combs, but that they have made it fashion-
 "able to be bald, by wearing all the hair off
 "our heads. I will make the Spaniards more
 "cheery of their mice, their dandruff, and their
 "rust, that you may go to hell to vend your
 "combs, bellows, and mouse-traps." At this
 moment began the hour, and the Spaniard
 foaming with passion, said, "The devil is at my
 "elbow, tempting me to murder you all, and
 "make these mountains as famous as formerly
 "Roncesvalles, for the overthrow of Charle-
 "magne." The pedlars seeing him change co-
 lour, and rave, rose up gabbling amain, crying,
Mon Dieu, and calling him Coquin. In an ill

hour did they name it, for the Spaniard drawing his dagger, and running at the grinder, made him quit his wheel, which receiving the stroke, tumbled down the rocks, and was beaten to shivers. Meanwhile the trap-merchant threw a pair of bellows at him, but he falling on with his dagger, cut all the rest, and broke the traps to pieces. The comb-pedlar laying down his box, began to throw stones; the other two followed his example. All three plied the Spaniard, and he answered them all, there being such plenty of that sort of ammunition in the place, that they stumbled upon it. The Frenchmen kept their distance for fear of the dagger. The Spaniard guarded himself with his cloak, and giving a kick to the pin-box, it tumbled down the rocks and flew open, strewing the mountain with pins and combs. He seeing the merchandise confounded, cried out, "I have already begun to do my king good service;" and seeing some passengers on mules come up and part them, desired they would give him a certificate of the victory he had obtained over the vermine that infested Spain. The passengers laughed, understanding the cause of the fray, and carrying away the Spaniard behind one of them, left the Frenchmen busy stopping the holes in the bellows,

patching together the mouse-traps, mending the wheel, and picking up the pins that were scattered about the cliffs. The Spaniard being at a good distance, cried out to them, "If you were malecontents in your own country, ye scoundrels, thank me for making you so in mine."

Italy, once the mistress of the world, and now only retaining the memory of its former grandeur, seeing its vast monarchy cut out into so many parcels, to enlarge the dominions of several princes, and its territories rent asunder to patch up many scattered states, was now at length convinced how easy it was for others to take from her all that she alone had so happily taken from them all. Now, therefore, finding herself poor, and extremely light, as being eased of the burden of many provinces, she resolved to turn ropedancer; and for want of ground to walk upon, exercised herself upon the straight rope to the astonishment of the whole world. She fixed the ends of her rope, the one at Rome, and the other at Savoy. France and Spain were the spectators. The two kings kept a watchful eye upon her, observing to which side she inclined as she danced, each striving to be ready to catch her if she fell. Italy perceiving what they aimed at, laid hold of the

republic of Venice, and grasping it with both hands as a pole to poise her, leaped and skipped at a wonderful rate; sometimes making as if she would fall to one side, and sometimes to the other, diverting herself with the eagerness of both parties stretching out their arms to catch her, and surprising others with her skill in recovering herself, and deceiving them both. As they stood thus upon the catch, the hour began, and the king of France, seeing no probability of laying hold on her, began to loosen the end of the rope which was fixed in Savoy, that she might come tumbling towards him. The Spanish monarch perceiving it, clapped in the state of Milan, and kingdoms of Naples and Sicily, as supporters. Italy skipping in the air, discovered that Venice, which she used as a pole to poise, at the same time crucified her, and therefore casting it from her, and laying hold of the rope, she said, "So much for ropedancing; " for it is not for me to rise high, when the " lookers on wish I may fall, and the pole that " should poise crucifies me." Then suspecting the support of Savoy, she betook herself to Rome, saying, "Since all are for seizing me, " I'll take sanctuary in the church, where, if I " chance to fall, I shall not want somebody to " absolve me."

The Neapolitan courser, from whom some have stolen his oats, and others drawn away his hay, while some strove to make of him a gelding, others a mare, and others a post horse, perceiving, that, whilst he was in the keeping of that incomparable viceroy, and invincible captain general, the Duke of Ossuna, he would cope with Bucephalus, his furniture being composed of the treasures of Venice and Brindisi. That he had made him a sea-horse by his many glorious naval victories; that he had turned him to grass in Cyprus, and watered him at Tenedos, when he dragged after the mighty ship Sultana from Thessalonica, for which action Neptune owned him for his first begotten son, brought forth in opposition to Minerva. He remembered that great duke had shod him with the Turkish half moons, and that kicking up his heels, he had dashed out the teeth of the Venetian lion at the prodigious battle near Ragusa, where with only fifteen sail he defeated eighty, obliging them shamefully to retire with the loss of many galleys and galleasses, and of the best of their men. Calling to mind these triumphs, and considering he had not now so much as a horse-cloth, but was galled and smuffed because they had thrown feathers into his manger; and that he was now put to draw

a coach, having been once so mettlesome, that the Frenchmen, though good jockeys, could never fit him. The miserable condition he saw himself reduced to, drove him into a desperate melancholy, and that into raving madness; so neighing fiercely, and breathing fire, he thought to have imitated the Trojan horse, and kicking and plunging to have overthrown the city. At the noise, in came the magistrates of Naples, who throwing one of their gowns over his head, blinded him, then stroaking and speaking him fair, they put on his collar and fetters; but as they were tying him to a ring in the stable, the hour began. Two of them that were farthest off, said, "It was more convenient and cheaper to give the courser at once to the Pope, than every year to fend him a nag with a purse, for by their malicious eyes it might be judged the Pope's nephews would sometime overlook him." The others surprised at this motion, answered, "That the king of Spain had secured him against that distemper, by placing three castles on his forehead as a spell, and that they would sooner cut off his legs, than see him serve like a mule under long black trappings, resembling a pall." The two first replied, "They talked like heretics, in refusing to be Papists; and that no saddle would fit

"the courser like that of St. Peter." The others, in a passion, said, "That to prevent the heretics making the Pope lose his stirrups in that saddle, it was convenient only the king of Spain * should mount the horse." Some were for the mitre, others the crown; and words passing, at last they came to blows, so that a terrible havoc had been among them, but that the elect of the people came in, and understanding the cause of the quarrel, said, "This horse, though hard mouthed, has had many masters, and for the most part has gone to them of his own accord, and not suffered himself to be led. It is requisite he be carefully looked after, for there are in Italy many a foot that look for baggage horses, and jockeys ready booted and spurred; and the old horse-stealer who caught him sometimes before, has now got a back-door to the stable. Neither is it convenient any French groom should curry him, for they tickle, and do not make him sleek; and pray look to the Monseignors, who wear the canonical robes, that they may have the better opportunity to throw their leg over him."

* This author seems to have been a prophet, Naples being now (Anno 1742) under the government of Don Carlos, a son of the king of Spain.

The great czar of Muscovy being exhausted by the continual inroads of the Tartars, and frequent encroachments of the Turks, found himself necessitated to impose new taxes upon his subjects. To this effect he summoned his favourites, servants, ministers, counsellors, and the commons of his court, and spoke to them to this effect: That they could not but be sensible of the great expence he was at in maintaining an army to protect them against the malice of their neighbouring enemies: That no state could subsist without taxes: That those which are imposed in pressing necessities were always just, and must be accounted no burden, being employed in the defence of those that pay them, who purchase their security, lives, and estates, with that small pittance, which, in a moderate and well-regulated tax, falls to every man's share to disburse: That he had assembled them to consult their own conveniency, and therefore expected their answer would be suitable to their common interest. The first that spoke were his creatures and ministers, saying, "The proposition was so good and just, it carried along with it its answer and concession: "That all was due to the support of the prince, "and defence of the country, and therefore he "might contrive, according to his pleasure, to

"lay whatever taxes he thought fit on his sub-
 "jects, because all that they paid was for their
 "own interest and security; and consequently
 "the greater the burdens he laid upon them,
 "the more he would convince them of the con-
 "fidence he reposed in their loyalty, and the
 "greater would be their honour." The czar
 heard them with satisfaction, but not without
 some mistrust, and therefore ordered the com-
 mons to answer for themselves. They, whilst
 the courtiers harangued, had privately whisper-
 ed about, and pitched on one to be their speak-
 er, and deliver their sentiments. He having
 taken a convenient place, said, "Great Sir,
 "your dutiful subjects, whose mouth I am, ren-
 "der you their most humble thanks for your
 "care in protecting and defending them; they
 "yield a blind obedience to your will, and
 "wholly submit themselves to your pleasure, as
 "becomes a people born under your jurisdiction,
 "who have ingrafted in them a hereditary love
 "and reverence for you; and they beg leave to
 "put you in mind, it is their glory they have
 "made this appear during your whole reign,
 "which God long continue over us; they are
 "sensible you make their protection your care,
 "and that it is that which makes you descend
 "from being a sovereign over them and their

" fortunes, to become a father to every one, a
" testimony of your goodness which they infi-
" nitely value. They are not ignorant of the
" many pressing and unexpected accidents which
" bring upon you unavoidable expences, not to
" be spared with honour to you, or safety to
" them, and they are convinced you are too far
" exhausted to defray them. I, in name of all
" your subjects, freely offer all they possess with-
" out reserving any thing, but must also offer
" two things to your consideration. The one
" is, that if you now take all your subjects have,
" you will drain that source which is always to
" supply you and your heirs; and if you undo
" them, you do that which you fear your ene-
" mies should do; and the consequence is so
" much the more fatal to you, by how much
" their being ruined by the enemy, is dubious,
" and by you certain; and they who advise
" you to destroy yourself, to prevent being de-
" stroyed, are rather pensioners to the enemy,
" than faithful counsellors to you. Remember
" the countryman (in *Æsop*) to whom Jove
" gave a hen that every day laid an egg of
" gold for his maintenance. He suffering him-
" self to be deluded by avarice, fancied, that a
" fowl that laid every day a golden egg, must
" have rich mines of that metal within her,

“ and therefore thought it better to seize all at
“ once, than receive it by little and little. The
“ gods having so ordered it, he killed the hen,
“ and was left without the treasure or the egg.
“ Do not you, great Sir, verify this fable of the
“ philosopher, for if you do, you will become a
“ fable to your people. A prince of a poor
“ people is rather a poor man, or poverty itself,
“ than a prince. He who enriches his subjects,
“ has as many treasures as his subjects. He who
“ impoverishes them has so many hospitals; he
“ has as many terrors as men, and fewer men
“ than enemies. Riches may be forsaken at
“ any time, but poverty cannot. We seldom
“ endeavour to quit the former, but always the
“ latter. The other thing I offer to your con-
“ sideration is, that your present wants proceed
“ from two causes, one, the immense frauds and
“ depredations of those about you; the other,
“ the present extraordinary emergencies. There
“ is no doubt but the first named is the fore-
“ most as to time; and whether it be not the
“ greatest, belongs to you to examine. Divide,
“ therefore, the supply you require as you shall
“ think fit, laying one part on those who have
“ made a property of your revenues, and the
“ other as a tax upon your subjects, and then
“ none but a traitor can complain.” Thus had

he spoke when the hour began, and the czar rising up, said, "Let him that hath taken it from me restore what is wanting of what I had, and what is wanting after that let my people pay; and that this may not be delayed, all you and your friends, who at a distance like spongers have sucked my revenue, shall be left as you were when you came to my service, only allowing your salaries." So great and universal was the joy of the commons, hearing this just decree of the czar, that they unanimously gave him the title of Augustus, and kneeling before him, said, "As an acknowledgment we agree to pay whatsoever you shall impose upon us; and that done, will of our own accord double the sum; and ordain, that this free offering may remain as a perpetual duty, payable every time you shall resume what has been taken from you, whereby it will come to pass, that covetous men will be afraid to receive what you freely give them."

The Hollanders, who are beholden to the sea for the ground they live on, which is only some scraps of land they have stolen from it, under the shelter of heaps of clay, they call dikes; having quelled their intestine broils by an universal trade, after they had erected them-

selves into a free state, and extended their territories, pretending to be the first begotten of the ocean, and conceiting that the sea, which gave them the land it once covered, for their habitation, would not refuse them that which compasses it; having covered it with ships, and peopled it with pirates, resolved at once in several places to encroach upon the east and west. They go to our fleets for gold and silver, as our fleets go for it to the Indies. They look upon it as the cheaper and shorter way to take it from those that bring it, than from the earth that produces it. The negligence of an admiral, or the favour of a storm, furnish them with plate at an easier rate than the mines could do. In these undertakings they have been forwarded, favoured, and assisted by all the princes of Europe, who behold the grandeur of the Spanish monarchy with envious eyes. Encouraged by these powerful supports, they have established a trade in India, settled commerce in Japan, and still persisting, after many disappointments, have at length possessed themselves of the best part of Brazil *, where they have not only the power

* This was wrote before the conclusion of the peace betwixt Spain and Holland, when the Dutch stood possessed of a great part of Brazil, and invaded the Portuguese conquests in India.

of government, but the profit of the sugar and tobacco, which enriches them and beggars us. In this place, which is the inlet to the East and West Indies, they reside like cormorants, ready to swallow ships and whole fleets, alarming Peru and Potosi; for that it appears by geography, that they may gradually, without wetting their feet, steal to those mountains, if weary of the sea, they should think much to creep along the coast down to Rio de la Plata, and Buenos Ayres, and to secure to themselves the Straits of Magellan. That world devouring assembly sat consulting over a terrestrial globe and sea chart, with a pair of compasses, leaping over climes and countries, and making choice of provinces that were none of their own, and among them the pensioner with a pair of scissors in his hand, ready to cut the world according to his fancy. In this posture they were when the hour began, and a decrepid old fellow snatching the scissors out of his hand, said, "Gluttons, who are
"greedy of provinces, always die for want of
"digestion; no surfeit so dangerous as that of
"dominion. The Romans, from a narrow spot
"of ground, too little to sow half a bushel of
"corn, swallowed up all their neighbours; and
"extending their avarice, brought the whole
"world under the yoke of their first plough;

"and it being certain, that whosoever pours
"himself out, wastes as much as he extends; so
"they no sooner had much to lose, but they be-
"gan to lose much; for ambition gathers more
"than force can preserve. Whilst they were
"poor they conquered the rich, who making
"them rich, and being left poor, took to them-
"selves the customs inherent to poverty, infest-
"ing them with those of riches and luxury, and
"by that means destroyed them, revenging
"themselves on them with the very riches they
"gave them. The Assyrians, Greeks, and Ro-
"mans are so many skeletons to instruct us; it
"is fitter for us to take warning by, than to
"imitate those ruined monarchies. The more
"we raise our small weight, and the nearer we
"bring it in the * Roman balance of power, to
"the great mass we would outweigh, the less
"we shall appear; but the more we draw it
"back, the better our small portion will turn
"the vast weight that stands against it; and if
"we draw back to the last notch, one pound of
"ours will poise a thousand of theirs. Trajano
"Boccalini hinted at this secret in the weight
"of his politic touchstone, and it is verified in
"the monarchy of Spain, from which we aim to

* The stillyard, which weighs great or small things by
putting forward or drawing back the weight upon the beam.

" draw away weight, which added to ours, will
" diminish it by the addition. Of subjects to
" become a free state was prodigious; to keep
" ourselves so, is a work that requires all our
" application. France and England, which as-
" sisted us to cut off from Spain that part of its
" dominion which was formidable to them, will
" not, for the same reason, permit us to swell to
" that greatness they may have cause to fear
" us. The axe which joins to itself all it cuts
" off from the tree, will not be esteemed an use-
" ful instrument, but rather an encumbrance.
" They will bear with us as long as they think
" we stand in need of them, but if once they
" imagine they can have occasion for us, they
" will meditate our ruin and destruction. He
" who sees a beggar, on whom he has bestowed
" alms, grow rich, either asks him to refund or
" lend. We can gain nothing, but what the
" princes who look on will covet for themselves.
" As they despise the neighbour that is upon
" the losing, so they fear him that is upon the
" getting hand. We by dispersing, act for the
" king of Spain against ourselves; for should he,
" to divide and weaken us, wilfully lose the
" countries we take from him, it were in him a
" stratagem and no loss; and he will never be
" so able to take what we have, as when he has

II 367

"suffered us to take what he has so far from
 "him and us. Brazil rather sucks and unpeo-
 "ples Holland, than strengthens it. It is enough
 "for thieves not to restore what they have stolen,
 "without continuing their thefts for ever, which
 "sooner prefers them to the gallows than to the
 "throne." The pensioner snatching back the
 scissors in a pet, said, "Though Rome lost it-
 "self, yet Venice holds out, and was at first but
 "a town-stealer, as we are. The gallows you
 "speak of is oftener the lot of the unfortunate
 "than of robbers; and all the world over, the
 "great thief hangs the little one. He that picks
 "a pocket is ever a thief; he that stole provin-
 "ces and kingdoms was always a king; the right
 "of monarchs is in the longest sword. It is na-
 "tural for one to be engendered out of the cor-
 "ruption of another, he that is corrupted, is
 "the cause of him that is engendered. A car-
 "cass complains not of the worms that eat it,
 "because it breeds them. Let every man look
 "to himself that he does not putrify, other-
 "wise he will be father to his own worms. All
 "things consume, but the small sooner than the
 "greater. When it shall come to pass that they
 "fear who pitied us, we will pity them we fear-
 "ed, which is a good exchange. If we can, let
 "us be what they are, who were what we are.

"All the hints you have given are good; let
"not the kings of France and England hear of
"them; but do you put us in mind hereafter,
"for that is an obstacle in the beginning, which
"proves good advice in the end."

The great Duke of Tuscany, who by adding
five letters, which compose the word Great, to
his title, has gained the ill will of all other prin-
ces, was private in his closet with a servant whom
he intrusted with his greatest secrets. They dis-
coursed of the beauty of his cities, the greatness
of his territories, the trade of Leghorn, and the
victories obtained by his galleys. From this
they changed subject, and fell upon the great
honour his family had attained to, being allied
to most monarchs and princes of Europe, by its
matches with France, whereby the kings of
France, Spain, and Great Britain, were, by the
mother's side, descended from it. Thus were
they discoursing when the hour began, and the
servant, as it were in a prophetic rapture, said,
"Sir, your highness of a private citizen was
"made a prince. Remember man; Whilst you
"was content to be a prince, you was the rich-
"est among them, and now you look upon your-
"self as father-in-law of kings, and son-in-law of
"emperors. You are dust; and if you happen
"to be father-in-law to France, and the curses

" of match-making fall upon you, to dust you
 " shall return. Your country is fruitful, your
 " cities wealthy, your ports full of trade, your
 " galleys successful, your alliances great, and on
 " all these accounts your state is truly regal ;
 " but this minute I have discovered in it such
 " stains as sully and lessen the value of it, which
 " are these ; the remembrance the subjects re-
 " tain that once they were equals ; the republic
 " of Lucca, which started up in the midst of us ;
 " the garrisons the King of Spain has in Tus-
 " cany ; and the addition of the title Great to
 " that of Duke, which all your neighbours
 " envy." The Duke, who before had not re-
 " flected upon any of these things, said, " What
 " method shall I use to take out these stains ?"
 The servant answered, " They are so grounded
 " in, it is impossible to take them out without
 " cutting off the piece, which is a remedy worse
 " than the disease, because it is better to be
 " stained than ragged. If the stains I speak of
 " be taken out with the piece, your highness will
 " scarce have a rag left, but will be rent to tat-
 " ters. The nature of these stains is, they are
 " cleansed by sinking in deeper, and not by be-
 " ing taken out. Your highness must make use
 " of fasting-spittle, and suck in by little and lit-
 " tle ; and what you now spend in portions for

"queens, lay it out in stopping the eyes and ears
"of those who observe you!"

The most serene republic of Venice, which in regard of its great wisdom and prudence, is as it were the brain of Europe where the judgment resides, was assembled in full senate. That assembly was composed of several sounds, some more solid, others more quick; the common difference betwixt old and young, yet all skilful, some by experience, and others by information, making together such a harmony, that all the princes in the world dance to their music. The Doge, crowned head of that powerful free nation, sat on a high throne with three counsellors on each side; on his right was one chief of the Quarantie, and on the left two; next these were the secretaries who count the balls, and in their places stood two officers, whose business it is to gather them. The silence was stupendous in so numerous an assembly, and so far exceeded that of a desert; it was hard to persuade the eyes, but that the audience was made up of statues and not of men, so very mute were the very diseases in the old, and so bridled the fierceness of the young. At length the doge broke the silence with these words: "Malice brings
"discord into the world; double dealing con-
"tinues it, and dissimulation makes him the

"sows it beloved even by him that suffers by
 "it. The wars we have occasioned among our
 "friends, not those we made with our enemies,
 "have given us peace and victory. We shall
 "be free so long as we employ others in subdu-
 "ing one another. Our light springs from dis-
 "sention; we are like the spark that is produ-
 "ced from the striking of flint and steel. The
 "more monarchs batter one another, the more
 "we shine. Italy, since the decay of the em-
 "pire, is like to a rich and beautiful heiress,
 "who, her parents dying, was left to the care
 "of guardians and trustees, and desires to be
 "married. But the trustees having divided her
 "fortune between themselves, and being loth to
 "restore, and covetous to keep what they have,
 "some of them misrepresent her to the King of
 "Spain, who courts her; and the others to the
 "King of France, who asks her in marriage, at
 "the same time finding those faults in the sui-
 "tors which they see in themselves. These false
 "trustees are the princes of Italy, and among
 "them it is not to be denied, but that we also
 "have seized a great part of her fortune. The
 "two suitors now press hard to carry their mis-
 "tress. We have made use of the King of France
 "to put by the Catholic King, who being so near
 "a neighbour in Naples and Milan, makes signs

“ to her, and from his own windows overlooks
“ her, The Most Christian King, who being at a
“ distance, could not gallant, nor so much as see
“ her, and therefore made love by letter: Now,
“ by the assistance of Savoy, Mantua, and Parma,
“ and his approach to Pignerol, he ogles and
“ courts her, and this obliges us to cheat him
“ of her. This is easy to do, because there is
“ less trouble in casting out the French, than in
“ bringing them in; they expel others with
“ their fury, and themselves with their haughti-
“ nesses. However, this snare must be so laid,
“ that at the same time we break the match, we
“ may receive thanks for promoting it. The
“ Most Christian King has bent his thoughts upon
“ Lorrain *, his success in Germany is dubious,
“ and subjects poor, which things discourage his
“ partisans in Italy, so that we shall not find any
“ great difficulty in attaining our ends, for his
“ own motions will disguise ours, and we need
“ not raise jealousies in those that have confided
“ in him, since their repentance saves us that
“ labour. It is my opinion we shall subdue the
“ King of France by encouraging him to go on
“ in his great undertakings, and by heightening

* He has since gained it (Anno 1742) as a revenue for King Stanislaus, though after his decease, it is to be annexed to the crown of France.

“his credulity. Our utmost endeavours must
“be used to raise the esteem he has of his fa-
“vourite; for this man who takes from him all
“that he adds to himself, lessens him as he grows
“great. As long as the subject has the ascend-
“ant over his king, and the king is subject to his
“servant, the subject will be hated as a traitor,
“and the king undervalued as of a mean spirit.
“The way to destroy a king publicly with safe-
“ty, is to stand up for his favourite. I know
“not whether Ravilliac was more fatal to his
“father, than Richlieu has been to him. This
“I know, that betwixt them they have robbed
“him of both parents, the first of his father, the
“second of his mother. May Richlieu conti-
“nue, for he is like a disease, which by conti-
“nuance either consumes itself, or him that en-
“dures it. It is requisite we cast an eye upon
“the succession of the crown of France*, which
“is like to fall to the king’s brother, whose ge-
“nerous nature we have reason to hope we may
“impose upon. He is like a fire that may be
“blown away, yet kindles itself. He is dis-
“obliged at the favours he receives, whereby
“he has offended the king of Spain, and sown

* Lewis the Thirteenth had that time no issue, and conse-
quently it was supposed the crown would devolve to his bro-
ther the Duke of Orleans.

" the seeds of diffention, which we may improve
" to our benefit. France is dissatisfied at the
" prime minister's pretending to be of the blood
" royal, which he claims by forged genealogies,
" and is disgusted to see all places of profit and
" trust in the hands of his kindred and friends.
" They remember the beheading of Montmo-
" rency, and the banishing so many great men;
" and they suspect that violence, and not right,
" will take place in the succession to the crown.
" The affairs of Germany are past composing,
" the Palatine being dispossessed, the Duke of
" Lorrain outed, and the Duke of Saxony and
" other Protestants of the empire conspiring a-
" gainst the house of Austria. Italy seems to de-
" spair of peace by reason of the garrisons the
" French have within it. The King of Spain
" has his hands full with the Dutch, who have
" taken what he had in Holland, and aim to rob
" him of what he has, being already possessed of
" the best part of Brasil, which furnishes their
" fleets with the trade of sugar, tobacco, and
" Brasil wood, and having fortified themselves in
" one of the Leeward Islands. Besides all this,
" he is engaged to support the Emperor, and
" maintain the state of Milan against the French.
" We, like the spring in a striking watch, must
" move these hands every hour and every mo-

ment, without being perceived, continually sounding abroad without ever turning back. "Our politics work like the glassmakers, who blow things into form, and we sow fire to produce ice." Hither was he come when the hour began, the wonderful influence whereof inspiring the politic brain of a republican of the *Capi Duobi*, made him discourse to this effect: "Venice is the very figure and resemblance of Pontius Pilate." *Probo*, "Pilate, out of mere policy, condemned the just, and washed his hands :—" *Ergo*, "Pilate dismissed Barabbas, who was sedition itself, and apprehended Jesus that was peace itself." *Igitur*, "Pilate positively said, What I have written, I have written." *Tenet consequentia*. "Pilate delivered the peace and safety of the world to mutineers, to be crucified." *Non potest negari*. All the assembly made a cry, and fell into confusion, the Doge ordered the republican, *nem. con.* to be put into irons, and that his genealogy should be inquired into, for that it was visible he was some way descended from somebody that depended on another, who was a friend to some one that was acquainted with some person that came from another that had something of a Spaniard.

The most illustrious Duke of Genoa assembled

the senate of that republic, to give audience to his Most Christian Majesty's ambassador, who harrangued them to this effect: "Most serene
"republic, the king my master, who has always
"had the same regard for the liberty of Italy,
"as to the majesty of his own crown; endeavouring to support it with all his power, and
"zealous for your good, without aiming at any
"other interest, but that of the several princes,
"who there possess the most beautiful part of
"the world, has commanded me, in his name,
"to put you in mind, that he, as a most dutiful
"son of the church, and good neighbour to all
"the princes about him, is willing to justify his
"proceedings before you; and make known
"his good will and affection to all the rest. You
"better know what you endure than we, who
"only hear or see at a distance. You have been
"long in continual wars, proceeding from your
"controversies with the Duke of Savoy, whose
"neighbourhood was ever troublesome, and a
"cause of jealousy to you; wherein his Catholic
"Majesty stood by you, under the title of Arbitrator. This has given you occasion to behold the plains overflowed with blood, and covered with dead bodies; cities ruined with long sieges and storms; the country devoured by quartering of soldiers; your territories over-

" run by Germans, a fierce nation, attended by
 " heresy in spirituals, and plague and famine in
 " temporals." You will not find the king, my
 " master, any way concerned in the introducing
 " of these calamities; for he has only supported
 " the weaker side, not with a design it should
 " grow more powerful by victory, but that de-
 " fending itself, the adversary might not become
 " more formidable, that so every man's right
 " might subsist, and be supported; and Monfer-
 " rat, which has been the original of all these
 " troubles, might not become the reward of any
 " man's ambition. To this purpose he has
 " maintained mighty armies, and sometimes
 " headed them in person, overcoming the dif-
 " ficulties of winter snows on the Alps, to make
 " way to relieve you, and returned triumphant
 " with no other profit but this glory. Now all
 " the world is in distraction, since the support-
 " ing of you has made him powerful enemies in
 " all parts, he flatters himself with the hopes,
 " that this republic will look upon him as no
 " less a friend than the king of Spain, in regard
 " to the liberty of its parts, for by observing an
 " exact neutrality, you will show you are sen-
 " sible of the king my master's goodly zeal, and
 " the justice of his arms." The Duke perceiving
 the ambassador had ended his speech, answered

thus: "We bless God that we can do no more
" than what we have hitherto done towards ser-
" ving his Most Christian Majesty with true zeal
" and affection. We have been eye witnesses
" of what you have said, and it is easy to per-
" suade men to believe what they see. It is
" true, this confidence might be somewhat di-
" sturbed by your king's countenancing, in the
" relief of Aldiguerre, the troubles the Duke of
" Savoy raised, to ruin, or at least disturb this
" commonwealth, which, had it not been relieved
" by his Catholic Majesty, must have been in
" great distress; besides that, it might be alarm-
" ed at the French possessing themselves of Pig-
" nerol, Susa, and Casal in Italy; not unlike
" those, who, under colour of parting a fray, run
" away with the cloaks of those that quarrel;
" and to add to this jealousy, his Most Christian
" Majesty has been to the Duke of Lorraine like
" a smoky chimney, which turns a man out of
" his house with tears in his eyes. However,
" without regarding these actions, we are, and
" ever shall be most truly affectionate to his
" crown, as far as is consistent with the great
" obligations this republic, and all the members
" of it owe to the monarch of Spain, by whose
" power we are protected, by whose grandeur
" we are enriched, and in whose sincerity and

"piety we rest secure; and therefore, that we
 "may come to a resolution, as to the point of
 "neutrality you demand; it is requisite we as-
 "semble in council all the members of this com-
 "monwealth, who are the support of our com-
 "merce." The ambassador and senate approved
 of it, which was done, with orders to the mes-
 senger to acquaint them to what end they were
 summoned, and that they must appear imme-
 diately. The officer obeyed his orders, deliver-
 ed his message, and requiring their speedy com-
 pliance.

The hour came upon them just then, and the
 Genoese growing into a fume, bid the messen-
 ger tell the Most Serene Duke, "That having
 "heard the proposal made in the King of
 "France's name, and being about to go to
 "obey his commands, they found themselves
 "so entangled in the Spanish funds, that they
 "were not able to stir; yet would have gone
 "to wait on him with those funds at their tails,
 "but that they were fixed in Naples and Sicily,
 "and rivetted to the revenues of Spain: That
 "they could not but acquaint his Serenity that
 "the King of France was like one that rows in
 "a boat, who turns his back to the place he is
 "going to, and draws towards him, and there-
 "fore it became him to look out sharp." The

messenger returning, delivered his answer with an audible voice: The ambassador took snuff, and was out of countenance, letting his hat and wig to be gone: The Duke, to nettle him the more, said, "Tell his Most Christian Majesty, "that since this republic cannot serve him as "he desires, they promise him, that in case he "continues his resolution of entering Italy, an "anniversary for the souls of the French, that "shall happen to go bear those company, who "made a churchyard of the wood of Pavia, paving it with skulls, and to bear his majesty's charges all the while he shall be prisoner in "the duchy of Milan, and an hundred thousand ducats ready money towards his ransom, "And do you take that history of the Emperor "Charles V. to divert you by the way, after "which it may serve your great king for an itinerary." The Frenchman in a passion replied, "You have spoken like good and loyal subjects of the Catholic King, whom those very "funds you talk of, and for which you refuse "me a neutrality, have made his transmarine "and foreign slaves and vassals."

The heretical Germans, among whom there are as many heresies as men, who consume themselves in supporting the tyranny of the Swedes, and the treachery of the Electors of

Saxony and Brandenburg, and the Landgrave of Hesse, perceiving themselves infected with the French disease, resolved to cure themselves at once. Considering that the salivation of so many past calamities, nor the flux they were put into at Norlinguen, nor the many bleedings, *usque ad animi deliquium*, of so many overthrows, had availed nothing, they gathered all the physicians, chemists, and mountebanks they could find, and having made known to them their distemper, asked their advice thereupon. Some were of opinion, that the only remedy was to purge out the French humours that were crept into their bones. Others affirming the distemper lay altogether in their heads, prescribed medicines to carry off the humour, and discharge them of dull notions, by the help of Hippocrates's *Tetragonum*, so much applauded by Galen, to which the smoke of tobacco exactly answers. Others more superstitious, and magically inclined, affirm it was no natural disease they were troubled with, but were exagitated by evil spirits, and that as persons possessed they stood in need of exorcisms. In the midst of the learned dispute the hour began, and a physician of Prague, with an audible voice, said, "There is no cure for this distemper of the Germans, because all their mala-

"dies and distempers are only to be cured with
"a regular diet; and as long as Luther and
"Calvin keep their taverns open, and they have
"thirsty throats, and as long as they do not ab-
"stain from the French cooks-shops and baw-
"dy-houses, they will never be so temperate as
"they ought to be."

The Grand Seignior, or Emperor of the Turks, a monarch raised by the forgeries and deceit of Mahomet to a vast dominion, summoned together all his visiers, bashaws, beglerbegs, generals, and other eminent men of his mighty porte, all or most of them being renegados, as also the Christian captives, who, lying in perpetual slavery, suffer a lingering death in the seven towers of Constantinople, without hope of redemption, by reason of the pride of that haughty monarch, who looks upon it as a diminution of his grandeur to ransom slaves, and deems that heavenly virtue of mercy as proper only to the vulgar. The concourse was therefore extraordinary, and greater the expectation of all men, because there had been no precedent of such an assembly in the memory of man. The Grand Seignior looking on it as too great a condescension that his voice should be heard, or his person seen by his subjects, being seated on a lofty throne behind a curtain, which allowed only some scant pas-

sage to the fight, made a sign to the assembly to give ear to what things one of the * Moriscos, who had been expelled Spain, offered to him by way of advice. The Morisco, after prostrating himself at the Emperor's feet, arose again and said, "We the true and constant Mahometans, who, through the course of a tedious captivity in Spain, have for many years privately entertained in our hearts the law of the prophet descended from Agar, humbly acknowledging the unparalleled goodness of the almighty monarch of the world, the great Emperor of the Turks, in receiving us the miserable relics of that expulsion, have resolved among ourselves to do his Most Potent Majesty some considerable service, which must be grounded on our knowledge and experience, having no fortunes to offer, as being a multitude stripped of all we possessed. To this effect, the first thing we propose is, that for the honour of our nation, and as a reward to our invincible generals and commanders, in continuing the memory of their exploits, it is convenient that, after the manner of

* The Moriscos were the race of the Moors in Spain, most whereof were counterfeit Christians, and conspired to bring in the Moors again, for which reason they were all expelled by King Philip III.

" Greece, Rome, and Spain, colleges and uni-
" versities be erected, and rewards be assigned
" to learning, for by it, after the death of the
" monarchs, and extirpation of the monarchies,
" the Greek and Latin languages still gloriously
" survive, and in them, in spite of death, do still
" flourish their heroic actions, virtues, and names,
" being rescued from the oblivion of the grave
" by those studies which enriched their minds;
" and made their nations cease to be barbarous.
" The second proposition is, that the laws and
" customs of the Romans be received, so far
" forth as they are not directly opposite to our
" law, to the end that policy may be advanced,
" disorders suppressed, virtue rewarded, vice pu-
" nished, and the distribution of justice may be
" so established, that neither affection, malice,
" nor bribery, may have place, but sure and
" universal method be settled in all parts. The
" third is, that for our greater benefit in fight,
" our crooked simitars be changed for Spa-
" nish tucks, because they are more handy ei-
" ther to defend or offend, the great circular
" motion of cutting being saved by thrusting,
" by which means, whenever we have come to
" handiblow with the Spaniards, we have su-
" stained unspeakable loss, that nation exceed-
" ing all others in handling their rapier; and

“besides, the swords are lighter of carriage, and
“easier to wield. The fourth, that to preserve
“health, and recover it when impaired, the use
“of wine be by all means allowed, because mo-
“derately taken, it is the best vehicle of nutri-
“ment, and most efficacious medicine. It is
“also a rich fund to increase the Grand Seig-
“nior’s and his subjects revenues, there being
“several liquors produced by the grape which
“create a considerable trade. Nay, it is more
“powerful and effectual than opium to raise the
“spirits and excite the blood to bold underta-
“kings. Neither ought the prohibition in our
“law, which has been already partly dispensed
“with, to be any hinderance, until a proper in-
“terpretation to our purpose may be found.
“For the putting all we have proposed in exe-
“cution, we offer to furnish schemes and direc-
“tors, who shall carry it on without any charge
“or trouble to the public; and are assured it
“will add much to the grandeur and glory of
“all the Great Emperor of Constantinople’s do-
“minions.”

Scarce had he uttered the last word, when
Siman Bassa, a renegado, started up, foaming
with rage, and said, “If all the devils in hell
“had conspired against the Turkish monarchy,
“they could not have invented four such cur-

“sed plagues as have been proposed by this
“Morisco dog, who, among Christians, was an
“ill Mahometan, and would be an ill Christian
“among the Turks. These fellows would have
“rebelled in Spain, and here they would destroy
“us. The reason for expelling them there was
“not greater than this; it will be convenient
“we revenge ourselves on those who sent them
“among us, by returning them back. Don
“John of Austria had not more destructive de-
“signs against our power, when at Lepanto,
“opening the veins of so many Janisaries, he
“caused the fish to swim in blood, and made a
“new red sea not inferior to the old. The Per-
“sian green turban doth not more maliciously
“aim at the overthrow of our empire; nor did
“D. Peter Giron, Duke of Ossuna, and Viceroy
“of Naples and Sicily, with his fleets and land
“forces, and terror of his name, more fiercely
“endeavour to obliterate the memory of our
“half-moons, whose light he often sullied, when
“our vessels scarce thought themselves secure of
“him at Pera and Constantinople, than thou,
“infernal dog, with those four propositions has
“laboured to do. Hell-hound, monarchies are
“upheld by the same arts that erect them.
“They have always been raised by soldiers, and
“always corrupted by pedants. Kings hold

"their dominions by the sword, not by their
 "books. Armies gain and defend them, not
 "universities. Victories make them great and
 "formidable, not arguments. Battles bestow
 "kingdoms and crowns, learning caps and de-
 "grees. Whenever a state begins to assign re-
 "wards for learning, dignities are conferred on
 "drones; craft is honoured, subtilty exalted,
 "and favour rewarded, and then the conqueror
 "depends on the doctor, the soldier on the
 "scholar, and the sword on the pen. The ig-
 "norance of the people is the greatest security
 "of princes. Learning, which instructs, makes
 "them mutinous. Learned subjects rather con-
 "spire than obey, rather examine their sove-
 "reign than respect him. No sooner they un-
 "derstand, but they despise him. No sooner
 "can they know what liberty is, than they de-
 "fire it. They can judge whether he that
 "reigns is worthy to rule, and then begin to
 "reign over the prince. Learning is the cause
 "that peace is sought after, because it stands in
 "need of it; and peace that is sought after
 "draws on the most dangerous war. No war
 "is so destructive, as that he endures who seems
 "to covet peace; the latter sues with words
 "and embassies, and the former makes its ad-
 "vantage of the fear that appears in the en-

" treaties. When a nation affects scholars and
" writers, goose quills take place of swords and
" muskets. Ink in writing is more meritorious
" than blood spilt. A sheet of paper signed is
" of more force than armour proof against shot;
" and the hand of a coward, by virtue of the
" pen, extracts from the inkhorn honours, re-
" venues, titles, and grandeur. Many vile
" wretches wear the black robe. Many raise
" estates by their writings, and many great men
" are descended from scribblers. Rome, when
" beginning in a small circumference, scarce big
" enough to sow two bushels of corn, it grew to
" a vast commonwealth, used neither doctors
" nor books, but soldiers and weapons. All
" there was violence, and no study; they ra-
" vished the women they wanted, subdued what
" was near, and aimed at what was farther off.
" No sooner did Cicero, Brutus, Hortensius, and
" Cæsar, introduce harangues and declamations,
" than they began seditions, and conspiring, de-
" stroyed one another, and others, themselves,
" and even the commonwealth. The emperors
" and the empire were destroyed, and over-
" thrown by the ambition of the orators. Even
" among birds only those suffer imprisonment
" in cages which talk and sing; and the more
" perfectly they do it, the closer they are kept.

“Then the schools were made the magazines
“against arms; orations sanctified crimes, and
“condemned virtue; and whilst the tongue
“reigned, triumphs were subject to the power
“of words. The Greeks suffered by the same
“itch of learning; they were proud of their
“academies, which vied with their armies; and
“their philosophers were a plague to their ge-
“nerals. Wit became the judge of valour, and
“they grew rich in books, and poor in triumphs.
“You say their heroes still live in their famous
“authors, and their language still survives,
“though their monarchy be extinct. The
“same happens to a dagger which wounds a
“man, which continues when the man is gone,
“and yet that is no satisfaction to the dead
“man. It were better the monarchy survived,
“though dumb, and without a language, than
“that the language should last without a mo-
“narchy. Greece and Rome are become
“echoes, forming in the hollow emptiness of
“their majesty, not whole sounds, but the very
“extremities of absent words. Those very
“authors that extolled them, could allot them-
“selves but so short a life at the pleasure of the
“reader, that in some it reaches only the un-
“derstanding, in others, goes not beyond curio-
“sity. Spain, whose people being in danger,

" were always prodigal of life, covetous of death,
" and impatient of age, when, with unparalleled
" resolution, it raised its head out of ruin, grew
" to a mighty flame from scattered embers, and
" became a prodigy from a skeleton, rather at-
" tended to furnish matter for writing than to
" write, and to deserve praises than to compose
" them. Their drums and trumpets spoke for
" them, and all their speeches were repeated
" huzzas before battle. They furnished the
" world with subject of admiration under Viri-
" atus and Sertorius; they gained glorious vic-
" tories for Hannibal; they obliged Cæsar, who,
" till then, everywhere fought for honour, to
" fight for his life, and they exceeded valour
" and resolution itself at Numantia. Yet of
" these, and many other of their brave actions,
" they write nothing, all was recorded by the
" Romans. Their valour made use of foreign
" pens; they thought it enough for them to
" act, and for the Latins to write. As long as
" they knew not how to be historians, they de-
" served them. Artillery was not long since
" invented to take off lives before secured by
" distance, to overthrow the strongest walls, and
" to bestow victories by aim, not by true cou-
" rage; but presently after was printing invent-
" ed in opposition to cannon; it is metal against

" metal, ink against powder, and letters against
 " bullets. Wet powder takes no effect, there
 " is no doubt but it is moistened by the ink
 " that sends down orders to provide and dispose
 " it. There is no doubt but there is a scarcity
 " of lead to make bullets, ever since it is con-
 " sumed in casting of letters. But it was bat-
 " tles that gave us empire, soldiers gained the
 " victories, and the victories the rewards, which
 " ought always to be bestowed on those who
 " always made us triumph. They who called
 " letters and arms sisters, knew nothing of their
 " pedigree, for no families are less of kin than
 " saying and doing. The steel is never joined
 " to the quill but to cut it; but the quill, with
 " those very wounds it receives from the steel,
 " revenges itself. Most contemptible Morisco,
 " it is our desire that among our adversaries
 " there be many learned, and among us many
 " victories, for it is victory over our enemies that
 " we covet, and not their practices. The se-
 " cond thing you propose is to receive the laws
 " of the Romans, which if once you had com-
 " passed, you had ruined all. Our whole em-
 " pire would run into confusion between plain-
 " tiffs and defendants, and inferior and superior
 " judges, and the people would be all taken up
 " in the employments of counsellors, solicitors,

"attornies, clerks, apparitors, sergeants, and
"other dependants of courts. Thus, war, which
"now makes choice of men, will be forced to
"take up with the refuse of embroilers of the
"nation; and there will be more suits, not be-
"cause there will be more occasion, but because
"there will be more laws. Following our own
"methods, we enjoy as much peace as we stand
"in need of, and as much war as we please to
"make with our neighbours. The laws in
"themselves are just and good, but where there
"are lawyers they are dull and senseless. This
"cannot be denied, since the lawyers themselves
"own it as often as they impose what sense
"they please upon the law, supposing of itself
"it has none. Every judge affirms he is an in-
"terpreter of the law, and, by giving a mean-
"ing to it, supposes it has none. I, for my
"part, am a renegado, and was a Christian, and
"do avouch, as an eye-witness, there is no law,
"either civil or rational, but what has as many
"meanings as there are lawyers, commentators,
"or judges, who give it so many, that it proves
"at last to have none at all. When, then, there
"is no reason to dispossess a man of his estate,
"there never wants a law, which being either
"frained, or ill interpreted, is ground enough
"for a suit, and both the plaintiff and defend-

"ant are in the end sufferers. Consider now
 "what two wholesome propositions have been
 "made by this thankful Morisco. The third
 "thing is, that we should change our fimitars
 "for long swords. In this particular, as there
 "is no considerable ill consequence to obstruct,
 "so I can find no great advantage to encou-
 "rage us to put it in execution. The half-
 "moon is our distinctive character, and that we
 "always brandish with our fimitars. To take
 "up the customs and fashions of enemies, is a
 "ceremony proper to slaves, and a garb for
 "conquered people, or at least it is an omen or
 "forerunner of both. If we are to be permanent,
 "let us stick to the old proverb, which says,
 "Let that ever be done, which was always
 "done, for by keeping to it, we shall be free
 "from novelties. Let the Christian thrust and
 "the Turk hew, and let this Morisco, expelled
 "by the former, be impaled by the latter. As
 "to the fourth and last point, which relates to
 "the use of vineyards and wine, let thirsty souls
 "agree about it with the Alcoran. No small
 "toleration has been given in this case long
 "ago. But I must observe, that if there be an
 "universal toleration of wine and taverns, it
 "will only serve to enhance the price of water,
 "and to make us buy rain by the quart. My

"opinion is therefore, weighing what has been
"proposed, that this cur is a greater enemy to
"those that harbour, than to those that expel-
"led him."

All the assembly heard this discourse with
profound silence. The Morisco looked pitiously,
a cold sweat running down his forehead. Then
Hali, the prime visier, who stood next to the
curtain that was before the grand seignior, af-
ter considering his looks, said, "Christian slaves,
"what say you to what you have heard?"
They seeing the blindness of that deluded na-
tion, and perceiving they loved their own bar-
barity, and placed their security in tyranny and
ignorance, abhorring the light of learning, and
the justice of laws, caused a Spanish gentle-
man, who had been thirty years in slavery, to
answer for them all, which he did in these
words: "We Spaniards shall not advise you to
"any thing that is for your good, because it
"would be a piece of treachery against our
"monarch, and an offence against our religion;
"neither will we deceive you, because we do
"not stand in need of frauds to defend our-
"selves against you; therefore we Christians
"have resolved thus silently to wait our doom."
The grand seignior influenced by the hour, and
drawing the curtains before his throne (a thing

never before seen) with an angry voice, said,
"Let these Christians be set free, their generous
"goodness shall be their ransom; clothe and
"furnish them plentifully for their voyage out
"of the estates of the Moriscoes. And let that
"dog be burnt alive for proposing of innova-
"tions, and all that shall follow his example
"shall suffer the like pain. It is my choice to
"be called barbarous conqueror, rather than be
"learned and overthrown. All our knowledge
"must be to know how to overcome, for an ig-
"norant people is the safety of a tyrant. I com-
"mand all here present to forget what they
"heard from this Morisco, the powers of the
"soul shall obey my orders, as well as the cor-
"poral senses, therefore let your memories dread
"my anger." Thus the hour gave to every
one what they deserved, the barbarous infidels
were hardened in their ignorance, the Christians
obtained their liberty, and the Morisco was pu-
nished.

A Dutch ship, by stress of weather, was forced
into one of the ports of Chili *. The Indians,
who guarded that harbour, being a people, who
in that conquered world manfully defended their
liberty to the damnation of their souls in their
idolatry, with weapons in their hands attacked

* Chili is on the coast of America, on the south of Peru.

the ship's crew, thinking they were Spaniards, whose dominions enclosed them, and from whose subjection they have still exempted themselves. The captain pacified them, saying, They were Hollanders, and came as ambassadors from that commonwealth, with a message of importance to the caciques and chief men. Then sweetening these words with rich wine, brewed after the manner of the north, and mollifying them with butter and other rarities, they were admitted and careffed. The Indian, who commanded, gave an account to the magistrates of the new people that was arrived, and of their intentions. All the principal men, and a great number of people assembled with their weapons in their hands. This nation is so provident against possibilities, and so jealous of appearances, that they receive ambassadors with the same precaution, as they meet an enemy's army. The captain of the ship came before them, attended by four of his men, and a slave serving as an interpreter: They asked of him, Who he was? Whence he came? To what purpose? And, from whom? He answered not without some dread of the warlike audience; "I am a Dutch
" captain, and come from Holland, a common-
" wealth in the west, to offer you our friendship
" and trade. We live in a land which the sea

"from above looks down upon with indignation,
"to see it dry below its billows. We were not
"long since subjects, and part of the dominion
"of the great monarch of Spain and the new
"world, where only your valour has exempted
"itself from his crown, which, like the sun, ex-
"tends its compass round the earth. We gain-
"ed our liberty with immense labour, because
"the severity of King Philip the Second pre-
"ferred the bloody execution of two noblemen,
"the Counts Horn and Egmont, before the so-
"vereignty of so many provinces. Revenge in-
"flamed our courage, and carrying on a war
"which lasted above sixty years without inter-
"ruption, we have sacrificed two millions of
"men to those two lives, and made the fields of
"the Low Countries an universal burial-place
"to all Europe. Our success has made us ab-
"solute masters of half those countries; and not
"so satisfied, we have taken many strong holds
"in the other provinces, have gained large do-
"minions in the east, and in Brazil, have con-
"quered Pernambuco and Paraiba, enriching
"ourselves with Brazil wood, tobacco and sugar:
"And to conclude, of subjects that we were to
"the king of Spain, are become his most impla-
"cable enemies. We have taken it into our
"consideration, that the Spaniards have not on-

ly subdued these provinces; but that in few
years they have destroyed in them many towns,
peopling them again with strangers; so that
there scarce remains the memory of the na-
tives in their tombs; and that the mighty em-
perors, kings, caciques, and other princes, are
so wholly extinct and buried in oblivion, as
if they had never been. We perceive that
you alone (either that you are wiser, or warn-
ed by the fate of others) maintain an heredi-
tary liberty, and by your valour the Ameri-
can race is preserved from slavery. It is na-
tural for every creature to love its likeness,
and since you and our commonwealth so much
resemble one another, it was decreed to send
me through such vast seas, and such dangerous
distance, to tender you their sincere amity and
friendship, and to offer, not only for your de-
fence, but to promote your farther designs, to
furnish you with ships, cannon, officers and
soldiers, who are such as are praised and ad-
mired by all, by whom they are not feared.
By way of trade they offer you free commerce
in their dominions, with a brotherly and per-
petual alliance, desiring for themselves, the
freedom of your ports, and the settlement of a
league offensive and defensive upon equal terms
on both sides. And the more to express their

"affection, by their great interest, they will secure you the friendship of many kings, princes, and commonwealths, their confederates." The Indians returned a courteous answer, telling him, That to receive his proposals it was enough to hear him, but in order to give their answer they must consult in council, and the next day at the same time would give him their resolution. It was so agreed, and the Dutchman knowing the Indians are naturally inclined to toys and curiosities, the better to gain their affections, he presented them with barrels of butter, cheese, casks of wine, swords, hats, and looking-glasses; and lastly, a telescope, highly extolling the use of it, saying, By the help of it they might see ships at ten or twelve leagues distance, and discover by their colours whether they belonged to friends or enemies; that they might do the same by land. He added, that with it they might find stars in heaven which they had never seen before, nor could not be discerned without it; that through it they might plainly discover the spots in the face of the moon, which look like eyes and mouth, and might perceive a black spot in the circle of the sun. That it wrought these wonders by drawing, with these two glasses, close to the eyes, things that were at a vast distance. The principal man among

the Indians asked for it, and the Dutchman having opened it to the due distance, and instructed him how to use it, delivered it to him. He clapped his right eye to it, and levelling it towards the mountains, set up a cry that testified his admiration to the rest, telling them, he had at four leagues plainly seen men, beasts, and birds, and the rocks and shrubs so near at hand, that they seemed bigger than natural, close to the farthest glass.

Here the influence of the hour affected them, and they having gabbled in their language some discourses in appearance passionate, he that took the glass, holding it in his left hand, directed his discourse to the Dutchman in these words: "An
" instrument that finds a spot in the sun, proves
" the moon a liar, and discovers what heaven
" hides, is a mischievous instrument, a glass
" pickthank, and cannot be grateful to heaven.
" Its attracting things at a great distance, is a
" sufficient cause to raise a jealousy in us who
" are far removed from you. With this, doubt-
" less, it was you discovered us so remote, and
" through it we have descried the design you
" labour to hide under your specious offers. By
" this artifice you pry into the elements, and
" thrust yourselves into sovereignty. You, as
" you say, live dry below the water, and wrest

"your land wrongfully from the sea. We shall
"not be such fools to take these for our friends
"who could not be good subjects; nor shall we
"trust them with our habitations, who have
"stolen theirs from the fishes. You were sub-
"jects of the king of Spain, and having usurped
"his dominion, value yourselves upon being
"rebels, and would have us, through a fond
"credulity, become a prey to your treachery.
"Neither is it true, that we resemble you, for
"in maintaining that native country which na-
"ture gave us, we only defend what is our own;
"we preserve our liberty, but do not steal it.
"You offer to assist us against the king of Spain,
"yet confess at the same time you have taken
"Brazil from him, which was his; if you take
"the Indies from him who took them from us,
"how much more reason have we to be afraid
"of you than of him. You must observe that
"America is a rich beautiful harlot, and since
"she was false to her husbands, she will never
"be true to her bullies. Christians say, heaven
"punished the Indies, because they adored idols;
"and we Indians say, heaven will punish the
"Christians, because they adore the Indies. You
"think you carry gold and silver, and you only
"carry well coloured envy and precious misery.
"You take from us, that you may have for

"others to take from you. That which makes
"you our enemies, makes you enemies to one
"another. Begone, then, within two hours out
"of this port, and let us know if you want for
"any thing. If you have a mind to gain our
"good will, since you are so good at invention,
"invent an instrument to remove what is by us
"at a great distance, for we promise you we
"will never look upon your country, nor Spain,
"with this that attracts things that are far off.
"Carry away this glass spy, this discoverer of
"the firmament, for we have no need of it,
"being able, with the help of our eyes only to
"discover more in you than we like; and let
"me tell you, the sun is beholden to it for
"showing you the black spot in his circle, or
"else for the colour's sake you would have en-
"deavoured to cut out and stamp him into
"money."

The blacks assembled in mighty numbers to
consult about obtaining their liberty, a thing
they have often earnestly solicited. The nu-
merous concourse being seated and silent, one
of the chiefest among them, who in that swar-
thy audience appeared blacker than the rest,
and had proposed this affair in the court of
Rome, spoke to this purpose: "There is no
"cause for our slavery but our colour, and co-

"our is an accident, not a crime. Yet certain
"it is, those who lord it over us have no colour
"for their tyranny but our colour, which is
"produced by the presence and nearness of the
"greatest beauty, to wit, the sun. Flocky
"heads and clotted hair, squab noses and blub-
"ber lips, are no better grounds for our capti-
"vity. Many whites might be slaves if these
"three things carried it, and it were more rea-
"sonable they should be so who are hideous
"with their mighty noses, like rudders in their
"faces, and snivel through elephants trunks,
"than we who have nothing to lose by the pox,
"and are the very opposites to the snouts. Why
"do not the whites consider, that if we look
"like blots among them, one of them looks like
"a stain among us? Did they make slaves of
"the mulattoes, it were more excusable, for
"they are a rabble without a king, a compound
"betwixt light and darkness, wainscot faces
"compared with white men, foils to the brown,
"the next degree to the blacks, and the very
"picture of soot. In all ages there have been
"men of our complexion famous for martial
"exploits, learning, virtue, and sanctity; it is
"needless for me to repeat a catalogue of them,
"for they are sufficiently known. Nor can it
"be denied that we are preferable to the whites,

" For not endeavouring to disguise the colour
 " nature gave to our skins. Among them the
 " women that are swarthy or brown, platter
 " themselves like walls to become white, and
 " they that are white, never satisfied with whiteness,
 " wash to increase it. Only our women
 " contenting themselves with their natural complexion,
 " are beautiful in the dark, and the
 " whiteness of their teeth shining the brighter
 " through their blackness, when they smile they
 " sparkle like the stars in the night. Neither
 " do we bely our age, dye our hair, or wear
 " false locks. Why then are we contemned
 " and chastised? This is it I offer to your consideration,
 " that you may consult what means
 " may be used for obtaining our due liberty
 " and rest."

The hour prevailed, and a black, whose head
 through age was become gray, contrary to the
 received opinion that blacks take no colour,
 rose up and said, " Let ambassadors be immediately
 sent to all the kingdoms in Europe with
 two proposals; the first, That if colour be the
 cause of slavery, they will take notice of the
 red beards, for the sake of Judas, and pass by
 the blacks, on account of the three kings that
 came to Bethlehem; and since cats and dogs
 of that colour are hateful, it will be but rea-

"sonable there be no men nor women of it ;
 "and let him in our name propose means for
 "the speedy destruction of fox heads, with their
 "apurtenances. The second proposal is, That
 "they mix their breed with ours, and blending
 "their brightness with our footiness, produce a
 "mongrel race, that so swarthiness may become
 "fashionable; being sufficiently warned by the
 "clearness of the Germans and Flemings, who
 "have embroiled and distracted the world, stain-
 "ed so many fields with blood, and filled so
 "many nations with rebellions and heresies;
 "but particularly let them remember the
 "Frenchmen's yellow beards. As for our am-
 "bassadors, let them take this advice, that if
 "the people * sneeze at them, they may take
 "snuff for their comfort, and shall answer God
 "bless us; bestowing the prayer upon them-
 "selves."

The mighty † monarch of England, whose
 island is the most beautiful mole upon the face
 of the ocean, having assembled his parliament,
 spoke to them as follows: "My dominions are
 "encompassed by the raging sea, hemmed in

* It is a custom in Spain to sneeze at the blacks by way
 of contempt.

† This was spoken in the person of King Charles I. in
 whose time it was written, in the year 1640.

"and defended by the waves; my kingdoms,
"as to the public worship, are of the Reformed
"religion, but in their hearts they are Catho-
"lics. I have engrafted the papal power upon
"the regal, wear at once the crown and mitre,
"and have two heads, the spiritual and tempo-
"ral. I suspect, though it is not visible, a spiri-
"tual schism among my subjects, and that the
"city which holds St. Peter's keys, influences
"the private councils in London. This is of so
"much more dangerous consequence, by how
"much it is the more private. It is a great eye-
"fore to me to behold the rebellious Hollanders
"grown up into a commonwealth. I confess
"mine and my ancestors jealousy of the great-
"ness of Spain, has raised them from a con-
"temptible spawn, to a bulk that exceeds the
"British whale. I see them daily encroaching
"upon the East and West Indies, and am de-
"voured by the vermine I bred. I know that
"almost every year they have rich fleets from
"their stolen dominions, and sometimes they
"snap all, or a considerable part of those that
"belong to the king of Spain, which brings
"them in inestimable treasure. By land so
"many years continual exercise has made them
"soldiers, with the reputation of innumerable
"victories; and their experience in obeying has

" rendered them fit to command. By sea their
" ships are not to be counted, their fortune is
" matchless, their conduct not to be paralleled,
" and their reputation above their neighbours.
" On the other side, I see my neighbour the
" king of France (whom I hate upon ancient
" grudges) aspire to the empire of Germany
" and Rome, having already got footing in Ita-
" ly, being possessed of towns, favoured by some
" princes, and in all appearance countenanced
" by the Pope. He is a youth born and grown
" up amidst arms, and gained triumphs with
" them when he was fitter to have played with
" toys. I now look upon his subjects to be
" wholly united, since he has demolished all the
" strong holds of the Huguenots, Lutherans,
" and Calvinists, and vested the power of the
" government in the Catholics alone; neither
" do I on this account esteem him the better
" Catholic, but believe him a crafty politician,
" and am persuaded he is in himself a time-
" server; that he only aims at his interest, and
" believes in what he would have, not in that
" he adores; a religion many follow under the
" name of another, yet he dissembles, because
" his design being to work himself into the pos-
" session of Naples and Milan, he thought it
" convenient to favour the Catholics, as being

" infinitely the stronger party : They are be-
" holden to their number, not to their doctrine.
" He pretends a Catholic zeal, because it is the
" best colour to disguise his ambition of enlarg-
" ing his dominions in Italy ; and he is as
" much beholden to his hypocrisy as to his va-
" lour for his conquests. In Germany, by call-
" ing in the Swedes, and stirring up the elec-
" tors of Saxony and Brandenburg, and the
" Landgrave of Hesse, he was sworn *in verba*
" *Lutheri*. He laid hold of Calvin's conscience
" to seize the Duke of Lorrain's dominions ;
" and thus he is a Janus in religion, looking
" upon the Turk with one face, and upon the
" Pope with the other ; Cardinal Richlieu be-
" ing made his instrument to wind him into
" that court. This causes my nose to swell at
" him, because I consider, that for the compass-
" ing his ends, he has made no account of my
" power, but has taken up with the fortune of
" the Hollanders, despising England, as if he
" were furnished with another wonderful Joan
" of Arc, or Maid of Orleans. I have so ill a
" relish of all these actions, that they set my
" teeth on edge, and the very air I breathe is
" nauseous ; to which, adding the success in the
" Isle of Rhe, it causes a loathing in my memo-
" ry. It occurs not to me with whom I can

“join in confederacy to clip the wings of these
“two neighbours, unless with Philip IV. king
“of Spain, who is a great, rich, and mighty
“monarch, being lord of the most warlike na-
“tions in the world, and in the prime of his
“age; yet I cannot but take notice, that my
“honour and reputation are engaged in resto-
“ring the Palatine, and I cannot expect it from
“the Catholics, and consequently must not hope
“it from the Imperialists and Spaniards, by rea-
“son of the difference of religion, and that the
“Protestants are already sick of the house of Au-
“stria. Besides, I guess the king of Spain has not
“forgot my journey to his court, since I have
“not forgot my return to my own, the memory
“whereof is renewed by the attempt of my
“ships upon Cadiz. I would willingly reduce
“the Most Christian King to his former bounds;
“for, like a fool, he is swollen above his banks,
“and has spread himself over all Europe; and
“at the same time would pull back the Dutch
“to what they were. It is your parts to advise
“what methods will be most proper for this un-
“dertaking; but at the same time you are to
“understand, that I am not only resolved, but
“eager to go myself in person, because I am of
“opinion, that a prince who being engaged in
“a necessary war, does not himself lead his peo-

“ple, rather condemns his subjects to carry arms
“than make soldiers of them; and they being
“thus drove like criminals, suffer more than
“they act; whence it comes they expect their
“liberty, and revenge no less by being over-
“come than overcoming. There is as much
“difference betwixt leading and sending of ar-
“mies, as betwixt jest and earnest, as appears
“by experience. Answer in relation to the
“public without meddling with my safety; and
“let me hear nothing in your opinions that
“looks like self-interest. Inform my under-
“standing, do not perplex it.” This said, they
all looked upon one another with an awful si-
lence, and after consulting together in private,
the speaker returned this answer: “Your Ma-
“jesty, great Sir, has contrived so to place your
“question, that you have taught us how to an-
“swer; an art highly to be valued by kings,
“because it creates perspicuity and a good un-
“derstanding. Truth is but one, it is plain and
“clear, few words express it, multiplicity con-
“founds it, it breaks little silence, falsehood
“leaves none unbroken. The reflections you
“have made on the king of France and the
“Hollanders are worthy your royal considera-
“tion. The imminent danger requires a manly
“and speedy resolution. The king of Spain is

"at this time the only confederate can promote
 "your designs, and will be the more effectual
 "if you join with him in person to crush these
 "two troublesome neighbours. And your Ma-
 "jesty may observe there is as great distance be-
 "twixt acting and commanding, as is betwixt
 "words and deeds. I confess your heirs are too
 "tender to be forsaken; but it is a less evil to
 "leave them young, than childishly to bear
 "them company, being a father." Scarce had
 he uttered these words, when an old decrepid
 senator, whose gristle-clotted beard covered all
 his breasts, his head hanging down, and the
 hunch of his back, through age, rising above it,
 lifting himself up by the help of his staff, said,
 "There is no doubt but it is a great rashness to
 "advise his Majesty to go abroad in person,
 "when his kingdoms swarm with concealed
 "Catholics, whose number is known to be
 "great, but suspected to be much greater. Your
 "Majesty has subjects fit to be intrusted with
 "such an undertaking; let an army of our own
 "religion be sent under the command of the
 "chief men who are suspected to be Catholics;
 "thus their allegiance will be secured abroad,
 "and fewer enemies will remain at home. Do
 "not venture your person, in which we venture
 "our all, and which alone secures all; for, from

"the speaker's opinion, I gather, he plots like a
"Papist, and does not advise like a counsellor."

The whole assembly fell into confusion, and
in this disorder the hour began, and the king
changing colour, said, "You two, instead of
"advising, have distracted me. One says, If
"I go not abroad in person, my enemies will
"deprive me of my kingdom; the other, If I go,
"it will be taken away by my subjects; so that
"you will have me stand more in awe of my
"subjects than of my enemies. The condition
"I am reduced to is deplorable. It remains
"that every one of you, within twenty-four
"hours, lay before me by whose and by what
"means I am reduced to this pass, naming per-
"sons and causes, without sparing one another,
"otherwise I shall suspect you all, for the blame
"lies only among you that advise me; for I am
"now resolved to attend my affairs both at
"home and abroad. The king of France goes
"abroad without having issue, or the hopes of
"it, and leaves a kingdom divided on several
"accounts; the nobility stained with the blood
"of Montmorency; the Huguenots suppressed,
"but not without thoughts of revenge; the
"country eaten up with taxes, and the whole
"kingdom groaning under the oppression of
"the prime minister; and you would have me,

" who have issue, and less obstacles to obstruct
 " me, stay to rock and play with my children.
 " France and Holland are become formidable,
 " because I have lived at home at my ease; if
 " I appear not abroad they will be my ruin. If
 " I stay for fear of my subjects, I encourage
 " them to contemn me. If once my enemies
 " are assured I cannot go abroad, I shall not be
 " able to secure myself against them; and if I
 " go abroad and perish, at least I shall gain the
 " honour of the attempt, and prevent the scan-
 " dal of cowardice. That king who acts not
 " himself in defence of his crown, furnishes
 " them with an excuse who do not assist him.
 " It will be unjust to punish those that follow
 " his example, for he cannot be judge of the
 " crime he taught, nor condemn what was
 " learned of him by those who imitate him in
 " forsaking the defence of their country. Be-
 " gone all of you immediately, and consult, ac-
 " cording to your duty, what is best for my ser-
 " vice, preferring it before your lives, and my
 " quiet; for I promise the more sharp the truth
 " you deliver shall be, the better I will look
 " upon it; and do not perplex me with the pre-
 " tence of carrying all the nobility along with
 " me, for experience demonstrates, that no man

“ ever assembled them in an army, but he lost
“ them and himself. The rings measured by
“ the bushel at Cannas, testify it to the unspeak-
“ able sorrow of Rome. So the wood of Pavia
“ made the sepulchre of all the French nobility,
“ and of their king’s liberty. So the Spanish
“ Armada, under the Duke of Medina Sidonia,
“ which, coming to invade this kingdom, en-
“ riched the shores with its wreck. And so
“ King Sebastian, who lost his nobility, his
“ crown, and his life in Africk. The nobility
“ united, causes confusion, and occasions ruin,
“ because they know not how to command,
“ and will not obey, and consequently their
“ pride breaks all military discipline. I will
“ take with me a few that have gained experi-
“ ence, the rest shall stay to be a check to the
“ licentiousness of the multitude, and a curb to
“ mutineers. I have occasion for such men as
“ think they cheat me in exposing their lives
“ for sixpence a-day, not for those, who, having
“ exhausted my treasure that they might go,
“ claim a title to my revenue because they
“ went. It were good that all the nobility
“ were trained, yet it were not safe. Private
“ persons must not arm madmen, or kings the
“ nobility. Take this along with you by way

"of instruction, and there will be the less to distract your consultations, and my resolution will the sooner take effect."

At Thessalonica, a city of Macedonia, seated at the bottom of the gulf to which it gives its name, and is subject to the emperor of Constantinople, by the appointment of Rabbi Saadiah, Rabbi Racabarbaniel, Rabbi Salomon, and Rabbi Nisin, was held a general assembly of the deputies of all the Jews in Europe. Thither resorted for the synagogue at Venice, Rabbi Samuel and Rabbi Maimon; for that of Ragusa, Rabbi Abenezra; for that of Constantinople, Rabbi Jacob; for that of Rome, Rabbi Chaminiel; for that of Leghorn, Rabbi Cersoni; for that of Roan, Rabbi Gavirol; for that of Prague, Rabbi Mosche; for that of Vienna, Rabbi Berchai; for that of Amsterdam, Rabbi Mier Armaac; for that of Oran, Rabbi Asepha; for the Jews in masquerade, who trade under the disguise of the Christian habit and language, Rabbi David Bar Nachman. With these joined the Monopanti, a republican people inhabiting certain islands, who lying in the Black Sea, betwixt Muscovy and Tartary, are politically maintained against their fierce neighbours, rather by cunning than by force of arms, or strength of fortifications. The natives are men

of inextricable subtilty, thorough-paced in hypocrisy, absolute masters of dissimulation, and of so deceitful a presence, that all religions and nations take them for their own. Trade gives them multiplicity of faces, and changes their countenances, and interest shifts their souls. They are governed by a prince called Pragas Chincollos. By his order there came to this sanhedrim, six of the most learned men in the doctrine of raking and griping; the first was called Philorgiros, the second Eristotheos, the third Danipe, the fourth Arpi Trotono, the fifth Pacasmazo, and the sixth Daper Bazalas. The assembly seated themselves orderly, according to the pre-eminence of each synagogue, giving the first seat to the Monopanti, in courtesy as they were strangers. After silence was made, Rabbi Saadiah, having repeated the psalm, "In exitu Israel de Egypto," made the following speech: "We, the first generation of the world, who are become the off-cast of all ages, and dispersed multitude, living in captivity and miserable contempt, perceiving the whole world entangled in the snares of discord, have assembled ourselves together to consult our interest amidst the present tumults, that we may raise ourselves upon the ruins of all others. I confess captivity, plagues, and obstinacy, are

" our inheritance. Fears and jealousies are the
 " first begotten of our understandings, and we
 " were ever malecontents against God, still va-
 " luing the deity we made, before that which
 " made us. From the first beginning his go-
 " vernment was irksome to us, and we followed
 " the interpretation of the devil, in opposition
 " to his law. When his omnipotency governed
 " us, we rebelled ; when he gave us governors,
 " we disobeyed. Samuel, who governed in his
 " name, was thought burdensome, and we ga-
 " thering an ungrateful assembly, though God
 " was our king, asked of God another king.
 " He gave us Saul, and him a tyrannical right
 " over us, declaring he would make slaves of
 " our children, and take away our estates to
 " give to his servants ; and he aggravated this
 " punishment, saying, He would not take him
 " from us, though we should beg it of him.
 " He said to Samuel, that it was him they de-
 " spised, not the prophet, or his sons. To fulfil
 " his curse, that Saul continues among us at all
 " times, in all places, and under several names.
 " Since, then, he oppresses us with infamous and
 " miserable thralldom in all kingdoms and com-
 " monwealths, and God permits every king
 " should be a Saul to us, who left God for
 " Saul. Our nation remained criminal in the

" fight of all men, all cast it from themselves;
" all retain, and all are ashamed of retaining it.
" We reside not in any place, but whither we
" came, expelled from another, we may be com-
" pelled to return. We rest no where, but
" where they are desirous to cast us out, and all
" dread we should be drove upon them. We
" cannot but own there is no congruity between
" our words and actions, and that our mouth
" and our heart never were united in adoring
" the same God; our mouth always called up-
" on the God of heaven, our heart ever gave
" idolatrous adoration to gold and usury. Being
" under the conduct of Moses, when he went
" up to the mount for the law, we made it
" appear, that the religion of our souls was
" gold, and any creature framed thereof. There
" we adored our own jewels in the calf, and
" our avarice took for its deity the resemblance
" of the sucking cattle. We admit not of God
" in any other metal, and in this we receive any
" insect for a god. He well understood the
" disease that caused our insatiable thirst, who
" made us drink up our idol reduced to powder.
" A mighty vengeance followed this crime, yet
" though it slew many thousands, it was a warn-
" ing to few, for whereas God afterwards did
" for us all that we could ask, still he did no-

" thing but what we grew weary of. He stretch-
 " ed out the clouds like a canopy, to cover us
 " in the desert from the scorching heat of the
 " day. He strengthened with the fiery pillar
 " the weak light of the moon and stars, that
 " they, assisted with its glittering motion, might
 " overcome the darkness of the night, and re-
 " present the sun in its absence. He com-
 " manded the wind to shower down our har-
 " vest, and dispose the regions of the air into
 " wonderful barns, pouring thence our suste-
 " nance ready dressed in the manna, with all
 " the seasoning every palate could desire. He
 " caused the quails, descending like rain, to be-
 " come game and nets for our entertainment.
 " He dissolved the immoveable rocks into run-
 " ning streams, and caused springs to gush from
 " the stones to quench our thirst; he dried up
 " the bottom of the sea into an easy road for
 " our feet, and raised the waters perpendicular,
 " heaping up their smoothness into liquid walls,
 " detaining in a secure structure the waves and
 " billows, which became a straight way for our
 " forefathers, and a sepulchre to Pharaoh and
 " his army. His word raised vermine, and lifted
 " frogs, flies, and locusts, in his army for our
 " service. There is nothing so weak, whereof
 " God does not make up invincible hosts against

" tyrants. With such small soldiers he van-
" quished the formidable enemy's squadrons,
" glittering in their steel armour, vain-glorious
" in the bearings of their shields, and flourishing
" in the feathers of their crests. These wonder-
" ful mercies, which our king and prophet Da-
" vid celebrated in the 10th Psalm, which be-
" gins Horula Adonai, were requited by our
" obstinacy and ingratitude with a loathing and
" dislike of our food, and with oblivion of the
" way opened through the waves of the sea.
" Many times God chastises with what he gives,
" and rewards with what he refuses. Such
" forefathers are a scandalous genealogy of our
" perverseness. We are generally looked upon
" as obstinate in endless hopes, whereas in reali-
" ty we are the most desperate people in nature.
" We are the *ne plus ultra* of incredulity, and
" hopes and incredulity are incompatible. Nei-
" ther do we hope, nor is any thing to be hoped
" of us. Because Moses stayed a little on the
" mount we despaired of him, and asked a God
" of Aaron. The reason why it is said we are
" obstinate in everlasting hope, is, because we
" have so many ages expected the Messiah; but
" neither did we receive him in Christ, nor do
" we expect him in any other. The cause of
" our saying always that he is to come, is not

" that we desire him, or believe it, but by these
 " delays to disguise our being the fool that be-
 " gins the 13th Psalm, saying in his heart,
 " There is no God. The same, says he, who
 " denies him that came, and waits for him that
 " is not to come. This is the language of our
 " heart, and, rightly considered, it is the quære
 " of the 2d Psalm, 'Fremuerunt gentes, et po-
 " puli meditati sunt inania adversus Dominum,
 " et adversus Christum ejus.' So that we say
 " we always hope, to conceal our always despair-
 " ing. Of the law of Moses we retain only the
 " name, giving it to the exceptions the Talmu-
 " dists have forged to belie the scripture, dis-
 " guise the prophecies, invalidate the precepts,
 " and dispose consciences to worldly ends, in-
 " structing our atheistical inclinations with fedi-
 " tious politics for the conveniency of a civil
 " life, and adopting us of sons of Israel, sons of
 " Mammon. When we had a law we kept it
 " not. Now we keep it, it is no law, farther
 " than in the very sound of the three letters.
 " It was necessary to declare what we were, to
 " excuse what we are, and promote what we
 " aim to be, advancing ourselves upon the wild
 " extravagances, which, like a frenzy, possess
 " all the earth; for now not only the Heretics
 " rise in arms against their enemies the Catholics,

" but the Catholics themselves, in hostile man-
" ner, invade one another. The Protestants of
" Germany for many years past have struggled
" for a heretic emperor, and in this they are fa-
" voured by the Most Christian King, who acts
" as if he were not so, and connives at Calvin
" and Luther. The Catholic King opposes them
" all, to keep in the house of Austria the su-
" preme dignity of the Roman eagles. The
" Hollanders, encouraged by being successful
" traitors, aspire to raise their treason into a
" monarchy; and of rebellious subjects to the
" king of Spain, dare presume to become his
" competitors. They wrested from him what
" he had in them, and they proceed to rob him
" of what is so far from them, as Brazil and In-
" dia, designing to extend their conquest over
" his crown. We have been no small instru-
" ments in promoting these usurpations, by
" means of the sham Christians, whom, under
" disguise of the Portuguese language, we have
" applied to undermine him, upon pretence of
" being his subjects. All or most of the princes
" of Italy have harboured the French in their
" dominions, pretending they read the Pope's
" inclinations in his looks, and interpreting his
" silent toleration for a positive command. Ex

" *motu proprio*. * The king of France has
 " practised an unheard of stratagem against the
 " monarch of Spain, discharging upon him all
 " his family, under the title of malecontents,
 " that he might consume the pay of his army
 " in pensions and presents. When was it ever
 " known that a king made ammunition of his
 " mother and brother's teeth against another,
 " that they might eat him up by morsels? It is
 " a beggarly invention, and yet most pernicious.
 " To wage war by mumping, looks more like
 " jest than earnest. We have synagogues in
 " the dominions of all these princes, where we
 " are the principal element in composing of this
 " confusion. At Roan we are the purse of
 " France against Spain, and of Spain against
 " France. In Spain, disguising our circumcision
 " by our habit, we supply that monarch with
 " the stock we have at Amsterdam amidst his
 " enemies, who make a greater advantage by
 " ordering us to delay the payment of the bills,
 " than he does by receiving them. This is in-
 " deed an extraordinary riddle, to wit, to serve
 " and ruin friends and enemies with the same

* The Duke of Orleans and queen mother of France,
 upon disgust went into Flanders, where they had pensions
 from the king of Spain, who entertained them to breed di-
 visions in France.

" money, and to cause him that pays it to make
" his advantage over him that receives it. The
" same we do in Germany, Italy, and Constanti-
" nople, and we have knit this indissoluble knot
" by placing the supply every one expects in
" the hands of his greatest enemy. For we
" furnish money, as he that lends upon interest
" to one that plays and loses that he may lose
" the more. I do not deny but the Monopanti
" are the boxkeepers of Europe, who furnish
" cards, dice, and candles, and at length the
" box runs away with all the gold and silver,
" leaving the gamesters nothing but noise, ruin,
" and a desire of revenge, which they encou-
" rage, that their gaming-house, which is the
" end of all men, may never have an end.
" Thus far they are the true copies of our ori-
" ginal. True it is they have much the advan-
" tage of us in the manner of worming them-
" selves in, because they are the Jews of the
" New Testament, as we are of the Old; for as
" we did not believe that Jesus was the Messiah
" that came, so they, believing that Jesus was
" the Messiah already come, they let him slip
" through their consciences in such a manner,
" it seems he never came to or for them. The
" Monopanti believe him, as a grave author says
" we expect him. *Auream, et Gemmatam Hieru-*

" *salem expectabant*, a Jerusalem of gold and
 " precious stones. Both we and they, through
 " different principles and unlike means, tend to
 " the same end, which is to destroy Christianity,
 " which we would not receive, and they, after
 " receiving, have rejected. And this is the rea-
 " son we have met to join a confederacy of ma-
 " lice and deceit. This synagogue has taken it
 " into consideration, that gold and silver are the
 " true sons of the earth which make war against
 " heaven, not only with an hundred hands, but
 " with as many as dig, cast, coin, gather, tell,
 " receive, and steal them. They are two sub-
 " terranean demons, yet beloved of all mortals.
 " Two such metals, that the greater body they
 " have, they have also the more spirit. No
 " estate or condition despises them, and if any
 " law condemn, the lawyers and interpreters of
 " it bring them off. He that thinks it an un-
 " dervaluing to dig them, values himself upon
 " gathering them. He who is too great to ask
 " of him who keeps, courteously receives them
 " of him that offers. And he who thinks it too
 " great a labour to earn them, esteems it an art
 " to steal them. He that says, I will not have
 " them, at the same time means, give me them.
 " And he who cries, I receive nothing, speaks
 " truth, because he snatches all. As it were a

"falsehood, should the sea pretend it does not
"swallow up the springs and brooks, since
"drinking up the rivers which suck them up, it
"also licks up brooks and springs; so great men
"prevaricate, when they say they do not receive
"from the poor and beggars, whereas they de-
"vour the rich, who swallow up the poor and
"beggars. The premises being granted, it will
"be most proper to level the strokes of our in-
"terest at kings, commonwealths, and prime
"ministers, in whose stomachs all the rest cause
"a surfeit, which being by us stirred up, will
"prove a lethargy, or apoplexy in their heads.
"Let the Monopanti have the pre-eminence of
"giving their opinion first, what method they
"judge most proper for our advantage."

They having buzzed about their sly thoughts
from one to another, agreed that Pacasmazo, as
the most fluent of tongue, and abounding in
words, should speak for them all, which he did
in this manner: "The goods of the world be-
"long to the industrious, and fortune follows
"the dissemblers and the bold. Crowns and
"sceptres are sooner usurped and snatched, than
"inherited or observed. He who in temporal
"preferments is the worst among the wicked, is
"most deserving without exception, and grows
"till he suffers himself to be outdone in vil-

“lany, for in all ambitious attempts, justice and
“honesty make tyrants criminals. No sooner
“these begin to use moderation, but they de-
“pose themselves. If they will continue their
“tyranny, they must not suffer any signs to ap-
“pear abroad that may prove them so. The
“fire that burns a house, casting out the smoke,
“calls people to quench it with water. Let
“every one take as much of this discourse to
“himself as suits with his purpose. Money is
“the true Circe which changes into sundry
“forms all that come near or fall in love with
“it. We ourselves are the example. Money
“is a disguised deity, which in no place has any
“public altar, but is privately adored in all parts.
“It has no particular temple, because it slides
“into all churches. Riches is an universal sect,
“in which most souls agree; and covetousness
“is an arch heretic beloved by all politicians,
“and the reconciler of all differences in opinion
“and humour. We, therefore, perceiving he is
“the most wonderful magician and necroman-
“cer, have chosen him for our North Star, and
“make him our loadstone and point to that pole;
“that he may not stray from our course. This
“we perform so artificially, that we leave him
“to the end we may have him, and despise him
“that we may gather him. This we learn of

“ the deceitful pump, which, by being empty,
“ fills itself with what it has not ; attracts what
“ others have, and easily sucks and drains the
“ full with its own emptiness. We are the very
“ resemblance of gunpowder, which being small,
“ black, and close rammed, gathers vast strength
“ and swiftness from its close imprisonment. We
“ do the mischief before the noise can be heard;
“ and as we open one eye and shut the other,
“ to take aim, we carry all before us in the
“ twinkling of an eye. Our houses are like the
“ barrels of guns, they are discharged at the
“ keys, and charged at the mouth. Yet though
“ we are such, we have countenances and man-
“ ners that suit with all men, and therefore we
“ seem not strangers to any sect or nation. The
“ Turks takes our hair for a turban, the Chri-
“ stian for a hat, the Moor for a cap, and you
“ for a veil. We admit not of the name of a
“ kingdom, commonwealth, or any other, but
“ only that of Monopanti. We yield all titles
“ to kings and commonwealths, we take from
“ them the power abstracted from the vanity of
“ those noisy words. We lay our design that
“ they may be lords over the world, and we over
“ them. To attain so glorious an end, we have
“ not found any to join with in confederacy on
“ equal terms, like you, who are at present the

“ sharpers of Europe ; you only want our qua-
“ lity to complete the subverting of all, which
“ we offer you entire, by way of contagion or
“ infection, to be transmitted by means of an
“ infernal device found out against Christians
“ by us here present ; which is, that as treacle
“ is prepared with the sharp poison of the viper,
“ because it is the moisture that goes the quick-
“ est and most directly to the heart ; for which
“ reason being compounded with many simples
“ of efficacious virtue, it conveys them to the
“ heart to defend it against poison, which is the
“ design of the medicine ; so we have invented
“ a counter treacle to convey poisons to the
“ heart, by falling upon the virtues and good
“ works that go to it, and to carry to the soul
“ the vices, abominations, and errors, which on
“ these vehicles will slip into it. If you resolve
“ upon this alliance, we will give you the re-
“ ceipt, with the weight and number of ingre-
“ dients, and furnish apothecaries well versed in
“ the composition ; in the contriving whereof,
“ Danipe, Alkemiaftos, and I, have taken great
“ pains, and our labour is nothing inferior to
“ the Trochisks of the viper. Be ruled by our
“ Pragus, for you need not cease to be Jews,
“ and at the same time will learn to be Mono-
“ panti.”

At the very uttering of these words, the hour had its effect, and Rabbi Maimon, one of those that came from the synagogue of Venice, rising up, and putting aside with his hand a fathom and a half of snout, that he might come the closer to the ear of Rabbi Saadiah, whispered these words: "Rabbi, I smell a rat in that word, be governed, we must keep a sharp eye upon these fellows, for to me they look like family Pharaohs and subtle encroachers." Saadiah replied, "Now at length I am convinced they are the very manna of instruction, for they taste as every one would have them. The best way is to say little, and give them a bait in the trap as to republican mice." Christophorus seeing the mumbling dialogue, said to Philargiros and Danipe; "I smoke the jealousy of the wicked Jews: Let every man of the Monopanti give himself a lick of the golden calf, and they will all fall upon their knees." They all ran upon snares and contrivances against one another, and Rabbi Saadiah, to amuse the Monopanti, said, "We look upon you as discoverers of the land of promise, and the true basis of our designs, that we may be united in a mischievous body, it will be requisite we consult the methods, and conclude and sign articles at our next meeting, which

"we appoint three days hence." Pacasmazo covering his snakes skin with doves feathers, said, "The time was sufficient, and the resolution discreet; but that it was requisite, exact secrecy should be observed." Then taking out a book bound in sheeps-skin with the wool on, which was curiously interwoven and wrought with gold thread, he gave it to Saadiah, saying, "This jewel we give you as a pledge." He took it, and asked, "Whose works are these?" Pacasmazo answered, "The works of our words. The author is Nicholas Machiavel, who composed the thorough bass to our treble." The Jews attentively looking upon them, and particularly observing the binding in sheeps-skin; Rabbi Asapha, who was deputy for Oran, said, "This is some of the wool the Spaniards tell us in their proverb, which says, They that go to fetch it, are fleeced before they return." Thus they parted, both parties contriving to meet again like the steel and flint for to batter, bruise, and beat one another to pieces, till they struck fire against all the world, for founding the new sect of Monetism, changing the name of Atheists into that of Money-mongers, or Monetists.

The subjects of princes, commonwealths, kings and emperors assembled together at Liege, a neuter country, to consult about their affairs,

redress their grievances, vent their spleen and breathe out their thoughts, before stifled under the fear of sovereign power. There were people of all nations, conditions and qualities. The number was so great, it looked more like an army than an assembly, for which reason they made choice of the open fields to meet in. On the one hand it was surprising to behold the wonderful variety of garbs and countenances; on the other the ears were confounded, and attention itself deceived by the strange diversity of languages. The voices seemed to rend the air, and resounded in the same manner, as when in the heat of harvest time, the fields ring with the indefatigable noise of grasshoppers. The most piercing cry was that raised by the women, tearing their throats with actions altogether distracted. All was full of tumultuous madness and raging discord. The republicans would be governed by princes, and the subjects of princes were for erecting themselves into commonwealths. This controversy set a noble Savoyard and a commoner of Genoa together by the ears. The Savoyard complained, " That his
" duke was the perpetual motion, and consumed
" his subjects with continual wars, to bear up his
" dominions, which are ever ready to sink be-
" twixt France and Spain. That this safety

“ consisted in embroiling the two kings at the
“ expence of his subjects ; to the end, that they
“ two being employed against one another, nei-
“ ther of them might swallow him, since both
“ these princes alternatively, first one and then
“ the other conquer and defend him ; all which
“ the subjects pay for, being never allowed any
“ respite to breathe. When France attacks, Spain
“ supports him ; and when Spain invades, France
“ defends him ; and whereas, neither protects
“ him for his sake, but to obstruct the other’s
“ enlarging his dominion by that accession, and
“ becoming a nearer and more formidable neigh-
“ bour ; the defence is often as fatal, if not
“ more to the subjects, than the invasion. The
“ duke retains a secret ambition to be thought
“ the founder of the liberty of Italy ; bearing it
“ before him, the better to draw to his party
“ the see of Rome. The duke is diseased of the
“ distemper of King Cyrus, is perplexed with
“ the remembrance of having been lord of Ge-
“ neva, and grows sick with the desire of being
“ supreme among the Italian princes. All these
“ motives are spurs to his ambition, which needs
“ a curb ; and for these reasons, I come to pro-
“ pose, that Savoy and Piedmont may be form-
“ ed into a commonwealth where justice and
“ wisdom govern, and liberty reigns.” What

liberty reigns? Quoth the Genoese, damning himself to the pit of hell, "Thou art certainly
"mad, and having never lived in a common-
"wealth, dost not know the misery and slavery
"that attends it. All the politics in the world,
"will never make us fet our horses together. I
"who am a Genoese, born under that common-
"wealth, which by its nearness, and the great
"contentions betwixt us, is well acquainted with
"you, and come to persuade your duke, with
"the assistance of us the commons, to make
"himself king of Genoa; and if he accepts not
"of it, I will go make the same offer to the
"king of Spain; and from him to the king of
"France, and so from one to another, till I find
"one that will take pity on us. Tell me, thou
"ungrateful wretch, to the goodness of God to-
"wards you, in making you the subject of a
"prince: Have you ever considered how much
"easier it is to obey one, than many met toge-
"ther in one room, but as divided in manners,
"inclinations, opinions, and designs. Dost not
"thou observe, monster, that in commonwealths,
"the government being annual and successive
"through several families, it is consequently
"under an awe, and justice is not freely distri-
"buted, for fear lest those who shall govern the
"next twelve months or three, should revenge

" themselves on him that governed before? If
 " a republican senate consist of many, it is all
 " confusion; if of few, it only serves to corrupt
 " the security and excellency of unity. Nor is
 " this remedied by the duke, who either has no
 " absolute power, or lasts but for a time appoint-
 " ed. If the government be equally divided
 " betwixt the nobility and commons, they make
 " up an assembly of dogs and cats; for the one
 " proposes snapping and barking, and the other
 " answers, scratching and clawing. If they be
 " rich and poor, the rich contemn the poor, and
 " the poor envy the rich. Consider now what
 " will be the issue of envy and contempt. If
 " the power rest in the commons, neither will
 " the nobles be able to endure them, nor they
 " to bear not being such. Now, if only the
 " nobility rules, I can compare the subjects to
 " nothing but the damned in hell, and such are
 " we the commons of Genoa: Nay, could I say
 " worse of our condition, I should think this too
 " little. Genoa has as many commonwealths as
 " nobles, and as many slaves as commons; and
 " all these commonwealths meet in one palace,
 " only to reckon up our stock, that they may
 " squeeze us either by enhancing or abasing the
 " value of money; and as if they were inform-
 " ers against our estates, their continual study is

“ to deprefs us into poverty. They make ufe
“ of us like fponges, fending us abroad into the
“ world, that plunging in trade, we may fuck
“ riches, and when they perceive us fwollen
“ with cash, they squeeze us out for their own
“ ufe. Tell me then, thou curfed abominable
“ Savoyard, what it is you aim at by your trea-
“ chery, what can be your infernal defign? Do
“ not you perceive that the nobility and com-
“ monalty tranfmit their power to kings and
“ princes, in whom being removed from the
“ pride of the former, and lownefs of the latter,
“ it compofes a fupreme head, authorifed by a
“ peaceful and difinterefted majefty, over which
“ the nobility dares not insult, and under which
“ the commonalty does not groan.”

They had fallen foul of one another, had they not been prevented by the muttering of a drove of legiflators, driven by a rabble of women, who, with open mouths, confounded them, fhrieking, and threatening to fall on with their teeth: One of them of fuch transcendant beauty, that it was increafed by the hideoufnefs of paffion, which is an affection that adds deformity even to the fiercenefs of lions, delivered herfelf in thefe words: “ Tyrants, for what reafon have
“ you alone made laws againft women without
“ their confent, according to your own fancies,

"whereas they are an equal part of the two
 "wherein human government consists. You
 "exclude us the schools merely through envy,
 "because we shall exceed you; and deny us the
 "use of arms, for fear you should be conquered
 "by our anger, as you are already by our smiles.
 "You have constituted yourselves the supreme
 "judges of peace and war, and we suffer your
 "extravagancies. Adultery in us is a crime
 "punishable with death, and among you it is a
 "mere jest. You will have us be good, that
 "you may be wicked, and require us chaste,
 "that you may be lewd. We have not a sense
 "but what you keep under hatches; you tie up
 "our feet, and hoodwink our eyes. If we look,
 "you say we are impudent; if others look on
 "us we are dangerous. And thus, under co-
 "lour of modesty, you condemn us to forfeit
 "our reason and senses. It is your jealousy,
 "you scoundrels, not our own weakness, that
 "often persuades us to act that against you, for
 "which you are most watchful over us. More
 "are made wicked by you than would be so of
 "themselves. If you, senseless rascals, make
 "yourselves the forbidden fruit to us, it follows
 "of necessity, we shall all become so many Eves
 "against you. Very many are good when they
 "are put into your hands, and you force them

“ to be wicked; and you receive none so wicked,
“ but most of you oblige them to be worse. All
“ your gravity consists in the wild hairiness of
“ your faces; and he who thinks his beard will
“ make the biggest brush, thinks himself the
“ ablest man; as if the strength of the brain
“ lay in long bristles, which rather look like a
“ tail than a head. This is the day these griev-
“ ances must be redressed, either by allowing us
“ a share in learning and government, or by
“ giving us a hearing, and doing us right against
“ the laws established, enacting some more fa-
“ vourable for us, and repealing others that are
“ prejudicial to us.”

A doctor, whose beard hung down in dag-
locks, seeing the women in a crowd, and bent
upon mischief, relying on his eloquence, at-
tempted to appease them with these words: “ It
“ is not without much dread I undertake to op-
“ pose your sentiments, considering reason itself
“ is oft overcome by beauty, and rhetoric is of
“ no force, compared with your charms. How-
“ ever, tell me what law you can be intrusted
“ with, since the first woman proved herself
“ such, by breaking the law of God? With
“ what safety can weapons be put into your
“ hands, since, with an apple, you struck to the
“ ground all the generation of Adam, not so

"much as those that were hid in the distance
"of futurity escaping? You say all laws are
"against you; this were truth, had you said you
"were against all laws. What power is there
"to compare to yours, though you do not judge
"according to the laws by means of the judges
"corrupting them. If we make laws, it is you
"that break them. If judges govern the world,
"and women the judges, it is the women that
"govern the world, and debauch them that go-
"vern it; for the women they love are more
"prevalent with many than the laws they read.
"What the devil said to the woman took place
"with Adam, of what God said to him. The
"influence of the devil is great over human
"hearts, if he speaks through the mouth of one
"of you. Woman is a rarity that ought to be
"feared and loved, and it is very hard to fear
"and love the same thing. He who loves only
"her, hates himself; and he who hates only
"her, hates nature. What law is there which
"your tears will not blot out, and equity is of
"force against your smiles? If we have em-
"ployments and preferments, it is you that
"spend the profits in your dresses. You have
"but one precedent to quote, which is your
"beauty; when did you ever urge it that it
"did not take place? Or, whosoever saw it that

“ did not submit? If we suffer ourselves to be
“ bribed, it is that we bribe you. If we strain
“ the laws, and incline justice, it is for the most
“ part because we advise with your charms;
“ you run away with the prize of the villanies
“ you command us to act, and we are left with
“ scandal of corrupt judges. You envy us our
“ military employments, whereas you are be-
“ holden to war for the happiness of being left
“ widows, and we for being buried in oblivion
“ among the dead. You complain that adul-
“ tery is a capital crime in you and not in us;
“ why, you charming white devils, if one slip of
“ yours dishonours parents and children, and
“ stains a whole generation, how can you fancy
“ death too severe a punishment? Whereas the
“ honour of many innocent persons is infinitely
“ valuable above the life of a criminal. But let
“ us judge by your works how you value the
“ penalty. You cannot count the adulteries
“ you are guilty of, because they are innume-
“ rable; and among us they are so rare, we
“ have nothing to count. Death is a punish-
“ ment that deters others from falling into the
“ same crime; but where does this appear by
“ you? To complain of our guarding you, is to
“ complain that we value you, for no man takes
“ pains to secure what he despises. By what I

"have said, it appears you are absolute ladies of all things; all things are subject to you; you enjoy peace, and are the occasion of war; if you would ask what many of you want, ask for moderation and brains."

Scarce was the word brains out of his lips, when all the women together discharged their fury upon the wretched doctor, in a storm of blows, scratches, and pinches, and so outrageously did they pull his beard and hair, that they left him as smooth as if he had been new shaved, and looked more like an old woman than the reverend interpreter of the law. They had quite stifled him, but that a multitude of people came in, hearing the noise and outcries. Among them a French monsieur, and an Italian monsignor, had already made known to one another their displeasure by some good bangs, and saluted their countenances with cuffs, followed by kicks, and such like familiarities. The Frenchman fretted with rage, and the Italian foamed with anger. Italians and Frenchmen flocked to them on all hands; the Germans interposed, and having with much difficulty appeased them, asked the cause of their strife? The Frenchman gathering up with both hands his breeches, which in the scuffle were fallen over his legs, answered, "All nations are met

“ here this day, to redress their grievances; and
“ I among the rest was discoursing with others
“ of my countrymen concerning the miserable
“ condition France is in at present, and how the
“ French are oppressed under the tyranny of
“ Cardinal Richlieu. I was laying open with
“ what art he pretends the king’s service; at the
“ same time he degrades him; how he covers
“ the fox under the purple robe; how, by em-
“ broiling all Christendom, he diverts all from
“ looking into his practices; how his subtilty
“ makes a property of his prince’s favour; and
“ how he had put the power of sea and land,
“ governments, preferments, armies, and fleets,
“ into the hands of his kindred and confede-
“ rates, defaming the nobility, and raising the
“ unworthy. I was putting my countrymen in
“ mind how the Marshal d’Ancre was hacked
“ and hewed in pieces, and called to their re-
“ membrance Monsieur de Luynes, and how
“ yet our king cannot rid himself of prime mi-
“ nisters, showing how this last was the only
“ friend to the other two, whose reputation he
“ established by blackening his own. I was dis-
“ covering to them how of late years traitors
“ have hit upon the most pernicious art that
“ ever hell invented; for perceiving that to
“ usurp kingdoms is become treason, and that

" he who attempts it is punished as a traitor,
" the better to secure themselves in their wicked
" practices, they usurp the kings, calling them-
" selves favourites; and thus, instead of being
" punished as traitors, they are adored as kings
" of kings. I was proposing, do now propose,
" and will again propose in the general meet-
" ing, that for the perpetuating the succession,
" establishing of kingdoms, and extirpating this
" sect of traitors, an inviolable and indispensable
" law should be enacted, ordaining, That what-
" soever king of France shall subject himself to
" a favourite, he and his heirs shall *ipso facto*,
" forfeit their title to the crown, and their sub-
" jects be absolved from their oath of allegi-
" ance; for the Salique law, which excludes
" females, does not prevent so manifest a dan-
" ger as this that cuts off favourites. I added,
" that at the same time it should be ordained,
" That whatsoever subject, under that title, pre-
" sumed to usurp his king, should suffer an in-
" famous death, and forfeit all the estate and
" honours he stood possessed of, his name for
" ever remaining scandalous and execrable.
" Now that distracted Bergamasco never confi-
" dering what was said by me, who never so
" much as once thought of the nepotes of
" Rome, called me heretic, saying, That in de-

“ testing favourites, I detested the nepotes, for
“ that favourite and nepot are two names, yet
“ but one and the same thing ; and though I
“ had not spoke a word tending to that mad
“ notion, he attacked me as you all beheld.”

The Germans, with the rest of the spectators, were surprised and amazed. With much difficulty they directed each to his post, and disposed the multitude into a silent auditory, to hear the propositions which were to be made in the name of them all, by a ruddy lawyer who had set them all a-madding, and put into their heads such wild and extravagant demands. Two trumpets gave the signal for silence, when he, standing upon an eminent place in the midst of the multitude, which swarmed about, delivered himself in this manner : “ The thing we all aim at
“ is the general liberty of all, to be purchased
“ by contriving how we may be subject to justice, not to violence : That reason may govern us, and not the absolute power of the
“ will : That we may belong to those who inherit, not to them that ravish us : That we
“ may be the care of princes, not their merchandise ; and in commonwealths companions, not slaves ; limbs, not lumber ; bodies,
“ and not shadows : That the rich man hinder
“ not the poor from growing rich, nor the poor

“ grow rich by plundering the wealthy : That
“ the nobleman despise not the commoner, nor
“ the commoner hate the nobleman ; and that
“ the whole care of the government be employ-
“ ed in encouraging the poor to grow rich, and
“ honouring the virtuous. And in preventing
“ the contrary, care must be taken that no one
“ man become greater and more powerful than
“ all the rest ; for he who excels all others de-
“ stroys equality, and they that suffer him to
“ exceed encourage him to conspire. Equality
“ is the harmony in which consists the music of
“ the commonwealth's peace ; for when disturb-
“ ed by an excess, it becomes discord, and what
“ before was concert becomes noise. Common-
“ wealths are to be so united with kings as the
“ earth (which represents the former) is with
“ the sea (representing the latter) : These al-
“ ways embrace one another, yet so as the earth
“ always defends itself against the encroachment
“ of the sea by its banks ; the sea always threa-
“ tens the earth, wears and endeavours to over-
“ flow and swallow it up ; and the earth, ever
“ fixed and unmoved, opposes the perpetual
“ motion and inconstancy of the sea. The sea
“ swells with every wind, every blast makes the
“ earth fruitful. The sea grows rich with what
“ the earth commits to it, and the earth with

“ hooks and nets drains and depopulates the
“ sea. Even as all the security and shelter
“ against the sea is in the land, which furnishes
“ harbours, so commonwealths are a refuge
“ against the revolutions and storms of king-
“ doms. Commonwealths ought always to
“ make war with their heads, seldom with their
“ hands, they must have armies and fleets ready
“ in the greatness of their stock, which is the
“ celerity that lays hold of all opportunities.
“ They are to make war upon kings by setting
“ one against another; for monarchs, though
“ they be fathers, sons, brothers, and relations,
“ are like steel and file, which though not only
“ near allied, but the same substance and me-
“ tal, yet the file always cuts and wears away
“ the iron. Commonwealths are to assist rash
“ princes, so far as may serve to overthrow
“ them, and the more cautious far enough to
“ make them rash. It is their best policy to
“ honour trade, because it enriches and carries
“ men throughout the world, gaining them
“ practical experience, by which they discover
“ the ports, customs, government, strength, and
“ designs of their neighbours. The study of
“ politics and mathematics ought to be encour-
“ aged, as advantageous to the public; and
“ nothing ought to be so much contemned as

“ idleness, though under never so specious a
“ title, or riches devoted to luxury. All public
“ sports shall consist of the exercise of fire arms,
“ and handling of other weapons, as is used in
“ battle, that they may be at once useful and
“ diverting; at the same time sports and exer-
“ cises; and then will it be decent to frequent
“ the theatres, when they are academies. All
“ formality of garb is to be absolutely condemn-
“ ed; and all the distinction betwixt the rich
“ man and the poor must be, that the former
“ extend relief, and the latter receive it; and
“ virtue and valour shall make the difference
“ betwixt the nobleman and commoner, for
“ those virtues were the foundation of all an-
“ cient nobility. I will here drop a few words
“ out of Plato; let him that has need of them
“ gather them up, for I do not know to what
“ purpose I bring them, but somebody or other,
“ perhaps, may know to what purpose he spoke
“ them in the third Dialogue, *De Repub. vel de*
“ *Justo*. They are these: *Igitur rem publicam*
“ *administrantibus præcipue, si quibus aliis mentiri*
“ *licet, vel hostium, vel civium causa in communem*
“ *civitatis utilitatem, reliquis autem à mendatio*
“ *abstinendum est*. If it be lawful to any to lie,
“ it is chiefly allowable to them who govern
“ the commonwealth, either on account of the

“ enemies or citizens, for the common advan-
“ tage of the city; all others are to abstain from
“ lying. I cannot but reflect, that whereas the
“ Catholic church condemns this doctrine of
“ Plato's Commonwealth, yet there are many
“ that value themselves upon being his com-
“ monwealth. Let us come now to what is
“ proposed by the subjects of kings. These
“ complain, that they are all become elective,
“ because those who are and continue heredi-
“ tary, elect favourites, who become kings by
“ their election. This is that enrages them, be-
“ cause the French tell us, that princes, who,
“ for the better government of their kingdoms,
“ wholly give themselves up to their favourites,
“ are like galley-slaves who travel by force,
“ turning their backs to the port they go to;
“ and that the favourites are like jugglers, who
“ the more they deceive, the more they enter-
“ tain; and the better they conceal their sleight
“ from the eyes, and baffle the senses and un-
“ derstanding, the more they are valued and
“ praised by him that pays for their tricks to
“ divert himself. Their chief art consists in ma-
“ king him believe that is full which is empty,
“ that there is something where there is no-
“ thing, that those are wounds in others, which
“ are but bruises in his armour, and that throw

"away what they hide with their hand. They
 "say they give him money, and when he looks
 "upon it, he finds dirt or rubbish. These com-
 "parisons are vile, but these men make use of
 "them for want of better, and so they affirm
 "those kings are equally to blame, who will not
 "be what the great God made them, and those
 "who would be what he made them not. They
 "presume to say, that an absolute favourite
 "brings upon kings the same that death does
 "upon man, (i. e.) *novam formam cadaveris*. A
 "new form of a carcass, to which follows worms
 "and corruption, according to the opinion of
 "Aristotle, in his Prince.

"Fit resolutio usque ad materiam primam."

That is, "There remains nothing of what was
 "but the bare resemblance. So much for this
 "point. Next, let us go upon the complaints
 "against tyrants, and the reason there is for
 "them. For my own part, I know not who I
 "speak of, or who I speak not of, whoever un-
 "derstands me may explain me. Aristotle says,
 "He is a tyrant who has more regard to his
 "private interest than to the public. Whoso-
 "ever can inform of any who are not compre-
 "hended under this definition, may give an ac-
 "count of them, and they shall be well reward-

“ed. They complain more grievously against
“tyrants who receive benefits of them, than
“they that are oppressed by them : For the be-
“nefits of tyrants make men criminals and ac-
“complices, and their severity proves them vir-
“tuous and deserving. They are of such a na-
“ture, that innocence in their dominions must
“be miserable that it may be happy. A tyrant,
“in respect of his covetousness and avarice, is a
“wild beast ; in respect of his pride a devil, and
“in respect of his riotousness and luxury, all
“manner of wild beasts and devils. Nobody
“conspires against a tyrant sooner than himself ;
“whence it follows, it is easier to kill a tyrant
“than to endure him. The favour of a tyrant
“is ever fatal, the greatest good he does him he
“favours most, is to delay doing him harm. Po-
“lyphemus in Homer is the emblem of tyrants.
“He favoured Ulysses, discoursing with him,
“and inquiring into his merits, he heard his en-
“treaties, saw his distress, and all the kindness
“he offered him was, that after eating all his
“companions, he would devour him at last. Let
“no man hope more favour from a tyrant that
“devour those under his power, than to be the
“last eaten ; and it is to be observed, that though
“the tyrant grants it as a favour, he that is to
“be eaten takes the delay for an addition of

"cruelty. He that is to devour you after all
"the rest, begins to eat you in all those he eats
"before you. The longer he delays feeding on
"you, the longer you have to lament you shall
"become his food. Ulysses was preserved by
"the giant as sustenance, not as a guest. To
"keep him in his den, in order to transfer him
"to his stomach, was more like burying him a-
"live than entertaining him. Ulysses put him
"to sleep with excess of wine. The bane of
"tyrants is sleep. You that are subject to them
"cast them into a sleep, harden your spikes at
"the fire, put out their eyes; for that done, it
"was nobody did what every one desired should
"be done. The tyrant Polyphemus cried, No-
"body had blinded him, because Ulysses, with
"wonderful sagacity, had told him his name
"was Nobody. He named him with desire of
"revenge, and defended him by the double
"meaning of the words. Tyrants themselves
"excuse those that kill them, or put out their
"eyes. Ulysses made his escape, disguised with
"a sheep's skin among the sheep he kept. That
"which a tyrant most carefully preserves, pre-
"serves his destroyer against him. Having pre-
"mised thus much, it remains to tell you, that
"we subjects are met here this day to consult
"how we may defend ourselves against the ar-

“bitrary power of those who either meditate,
“or immediately govern kingdoms and com-
“monwealths. The chief heads I have to offer
“to this purpose are these: That all counsellors
“be fixed for ever in their posts, without hoping
“to rise a step higher, because there is no room
“for application or justice, where a man has
“one charge, and aims at another; and the
“ambition of ascending to another more emi-
“nent employment, makes him look upon him-
“self as a passenger not a resident; so that
“his charge serves only to purchase that he
“aspires to; and being thus distracted he at-
“tends neither; not that he has, because he
“designs to leave it, nor that he desires, because
“as yet he has it not. Every man is useful in
“that post where he has gained experience; and
“troublesome where he learns the first rudi-
“ments, because they remove from business
“they were versed in, to that they do not un-
“derstand. What honours are conferred on
“them, must still be such as are proper to their
“profession, not mixing civil and military, lest
“the sword and the gown render the habit dis-
“agreeable; for the gown is cumbersome to the
“sword, and the sword disdains to be hid under
“the gown. The next thing is, That rewards be
“indispensable, that is, not only that they be

" bestowed on the unworthy, but that they be
 " not permitted to pretend to them ; for if the
 " reward of virtue be exhausted on vice, the
 " prince or commonwealth will be robbed of
 " their greatest treasure, and the metal of which
 " the recompense consists, will become base and
 " contemptible. Neither the deserving, nor un-
 " deserving must expect it ; the former, because
 " it must be immediately given him ; the latter,
 " because he must never have it. Gold and
 " diamonds were better employed in making
 " fetters to secure criminals, than in military and
 " honourable ensigns bestowed on vagabonds
 " and vicious persons. This doctrine was well
 " received among the Romans, who, with a
 " branch of laurel or oak, rewarded more
 " wounds, and victories over cities, provinces,
 " and kingdoms, than it bore leaves. Let only
 " the brave and experienced be admitted to
 " councils of state and war ; let the blood they
 " have spilt, and their qualifications, not the
 " pride of long genealogies, be their recommen-
 " dation. The brave and fortunate are to be
 " preferred to military employments. To be
 " fortunate as well as valiant is a great addition.
 " Lucan gives this advice :

——— *Fatis accede, Deique*
Et cole felices, miseros fuge.

"I have always read these words with delight,
"and this admirable poet (let who will deny it)
"with attention, as preferable to all but Homer
"for politics and military sense. The courts of
"justice are to be filled with learned and disin-
"terested persons. He who is not covetous, is
"subservient to no vice, because vices induce
"the interest for which they are sold. Let them
"know the laws, but not more than the laws.
"Let them cause them to be obeyed, not make
"them obedient to their wills. This is the very
"touchstone of judgment. I have said, you
"may now say what occurs, and propose the
"most convenient and practicable redress against
"your grievances."

He ceased, and the auditors being a multitude of several nations and languages, there ensued such a confused buzzing of unintelligible jargons, that it sounded as if the whole clack of the tower of Babel had been turned loose in that place. They understood not themselves, nor one another. All was filled with contention and discord, and by their looks and actions they appeared like an assembly of people, distracted or possessed. Then the congregation of shepherds, whom the sheep-skins, bound about with flings, are rather a reproach than a defence against the weather, said, "They must be heard

"immediately before any others, because their
 "sheep had rebelled, saying, That they kept
 "them from wolves who eat them one by one
 "at a time, to the end they themselves might
 "shear, fleece, kill, and sell them all at once.
 "And since the wolves at most devoured one,
 "two, ten, or twenty, their design was, that the
 "wolves would guard them against the shep-
 "herds, not the shepherds against the wolves.
 "That they looked upon the hunger of their
 "enemies as less prejudicial to them than the
 "avarice of their guardians, and had brought
 "the shepherds dogs as evidence against them."
 There was not one soul but said, "We guess
 "what they would be at, the sheep are no fools
 "if they bring this to pass."

At this stand they were when the hour af-
 fected them, and being all enraged, some cried,
 "We are for the wolves;" others, "They are
 "all wolves;" others, "It is all the same thing;"
 others, "They are all bad;" and many others
 contradicted them. The lawyers perceiving
 them ready to fall to loggerheads, in order to
 appease them, said, "It was a case that required
 "mature deliberation, therefore advised to defer
 "it till the next day, and to have recourse to
 "the churches to implore a blessing on their de-
 "bates."

The Frenchmen hearing that word, cried out,
“ If there must be recourse to the churches, we
“ are undone, and we fear the same should be-
“ fal us as did the owl when she was sick. She
“ advising about her distemper with the fox,
“ whom she judged the most skilful among the
“ beasts, and also with the rook whom she took
“ for a physician, because she often saw him up-
“ on carrion mules, they told her there was no
“ remedy for her but to repair to the temples.
“ The owl hearing their opinion, answered,
“ Then my case is desperate, if the remedy is
“ only to be found in those holy places, for I
“ have left them all in the dark, sucking the oil
“ out of the lamps, and there is not an idol that
“ I have not bewrayed.” The Italian hearing
this discourse, with all his might cried out;
“ The comparison is allowed you, and we make
“ bold to put you, and all such as feed upon the
“ church, in mind of what Homer relates of the
“ mice, when they fought with the frogs, for
“ then they having recourse to the gods for their
“ assistance, all the deities excused themselves,
“ some saying they had gnawed their hands,
“ others their feet, others their garments, others
“ their crowns, and others the tips of their
“ noses, so that there was none but missed some
“ part of his image, and bore the marks of their

"teeth." Good God! what a hideous tumult the monsieurs raised against the poor Italian, the confusion of hell is nothing compared to it. The whole multitude ran great danger in endeavouring to pacify them. At length withheld, but not silenced, they are parted, all complaining of what they endured, and every one raving, that he might change his condition with another.

As these things were in agitation upon earth, and the gods attentively looking on, the Sun said, "The hour is now at the last gasp, and "the shade of the gnomon will in a trice touch "the number five. Great father of all, do thou "determine whether Fortune shall proceed before the hour expire, or else wheel and roll "back as she used to do." Jove answered, "I "have answered, That during this hour, which "gave to every man what he deserved, those "who, because they were poor and despicable, "were also humble, are become proud and intolerable; and those who being rich and respected, were consequently vicious, perverse, "arrogant, and wicked, seeing themselves poor "and abject, are become penitent, bashful, and "pious; so that the consequence is, that those "who were good men are become knaves, and "the knaves good men. This little time may

“ suffice to satisfy the complaints of mortals,
“ who seldom know what they ask of us; for
“ such is their frailty, that he who does ill when
“ he can, forbears when he can do it no longer,
“ and this is not repentance, but a forced re-
“ fraining from wickedness. Oppression and
“ misery curb, but do not correct them. Ho-
“ nour and prosperity make them act that, which
“ if they had sooner attained them, they would
“ always have acted. Let Fortune direct her
“ wheel and globe in their former course, and
“ cause merits in the wise, and punishment to
“ the senseless, wherein our infallible providence
“ and divine presence shall always be assisting to
“ her. Let all men receive what she distributes;
“ that is, either frowns or smiles, since neither
“ are bad in themselves; for patiently enduring
“ the former, and magnanimously contemning
“ the latter, they both became equally advan-
“ tageous. And let him that receives and makes
“ his misfortune of what he takes to himself,
“ complain of himself, and not of Fortune, who
“ gives to all indifferently, and without favour
“ or affection. We permit Fortune to com-
“ plain against men, who making a wrong use
“ of their prosperity or adversity, defame and
“ curse her.”

At this time it struck five, and the hour of

all men was at an end. Then Fortune well pleased with what Jove had said, changing hands, began again to ravel up the cares of the world, and unwind what was wound backwards; which done, fixing her globe on the regions of the air, she slid down as if she had been upon ice, till she found herself upon earth.

Vulcan, that blacksmith god who keeps time with his hammer, cried, "It is hungry weather, and I being in haste to obey, left two ropes of garlic-a-roasting at my forge, to break my fast with the Cyclops." All-ruling Jove ordered meat to be brought, and immediately there appeared Iris (chambermaid to Juno) with nectar, and Ganymede with a platter of ambrosia. Juno, who spied him by her husband's side, and had more mind to suck his blood than to swill the heavenly liquor, spitting fire, and hissing like an adder when his tail has been trod, said, "Either this bardach or I must reign in Olympus, or else I will sue for a divorce in Hymen's court." Had not the eagle the rogue bestrided flunk away with him, she had made hawks meat of him with her nails. Jove began to blow his thunderbolt, and she said, "I will snatch it from you, to destroy that sodomite page." Minerva, the product of Jupiter's noddle, who, had he been a blockhead,

could never have been born, with fair words soothed Juno, enraged with the sight of her husband's vile cupbearer. But Venus in a fume heightened her jealousy, scolding like a butter-whore, and rated Jove as if he had been a chimney-sweeper. Then Mercury letting loose his clack, said, "All would do well," and therefore desired them not to disturb the heavenly banquet. Mars seeing the ambrosia handed about in china dishes, like a roaring bully deity, cried out, "Damn your coffeedishes, let the Moon and other petty goddesses drink out of them." Then mixing Bacchus and Neptune, he swallowed down both the gods at two or three pulls, and laying hold of Pan, he sliced him out, and cutting up his flocks of sheep, devoured them by wholesale. Saturn stayed his stomach with half a dozen children. Mercury, like a true sponger, stuck close to Venus, when she was cramming her chops with biscuits and sugar-plumbs. Pluto drew out of his knapsack some griskins Proserpine had provided for his journey; Vulcan, who stood gaping, perceiving it, came limping towards him, and courteously intruding himself with much ceremony, began to lay on and swallow. The Sun, who is the father of jollity, pulling out his lute, sung a hymn in praise of Jupiter, running division

without end. Venus and Mars being offended at the gravity of the tune, and seriousness of the words, he, to the harmony of a pair of tongs, roared out a bawdy song, and she rattling a pair of overgrown castanets, danced a jig, as if she would have skipped over the heavens, and shaken herself to atoms, tickling with her wanton motions the hearts of all the gods. Her dance set them all into such an itching, that they could not hold their hands or feet still. Jove, whose mouth watered at the lewd motions of the goddess, said, "This is a farewell to Ganymede, and no quarrel." He gave them leave, and they being all full and satisfied, slunk away, crying, "The devil take the hindmost," and the lot fell to the eagle sliding cupbearer.

1945-1946

...eleventh

BY THE MIGHTY

OLD FATHER TIME

and the other two are the same as the first two.

[illegible]

PROCLAMATION

1000

1/2 cup of sugar

10. The following is a list of the names of the persons who have been appointed to the various committees of the Board of Directors of the City of New York, for the year 1901:

V.F. the mighty Old Paper

1940. 1941. 1942. 1943. 1944. 1945. 1946. 1947. 1948. 1949. 1950. 1951. 1952. 1953. 1954. 1955. 1956. 1957. 1958. 1959. 1960. 1961. 1962. 1963. 1964. 1965. 1966. 1967. 1968. 1969. 1970. 1971. 1972. 1973. 1974. 1975. 1976. 1977. 1978. 1979. 1980. 1981. 1982. 1983. 1984. 1985. 1986. 1987. 1988. 1989. 1990. 1991. 1992. 1993. 1994. 1995. 1996. 1997. 1998. 1999. 2000. 2001. 2002. 2003. 2004. 2005. 2006. 2007. 2008. 2009. 2010. 2011. 2012. 2013. 2014. 2015. 2016. 2017. 2018. 2019. 2020. 2021. 2022. 2023. 2024. 2025. 2026. 2027. 2028. 2029. 2030. 2031. 2032. 2033. 2034. 2035. 2036. 2037. 2038. 2039. 2040. 2041. 2042. 2043. 2044. 2045. 2046. 2047. 2048. 2049. 2050. 2051. 2052. 2053. 2054. 2055. 2056. 2057. 2058. 2059. 2060. 2061. 2062. 2063. 2064. 2065. 2066. 2067. 2068. 2069. 2070. 2071. 2072. 2073. 2074. 2075. 2076. 2077. 2078. 2079. 2080. 2081. 2082. 2083. 2084. 2085. 2086. 2087. 2088. 2089. 2090. 2091. 2092. 2093. 2094. 2095. 2096. 2097. 2098. 2099. 2100. 2101. 2102. 2103. 2104. 2105. 2106. 2107. 2108. 2109. 2110. 2111. 2112. 2113. 2114. 2115. 2116. 2117. 2118. 2119. 2120. 2121. 2122. 2123. 2124. 2125. 2126. 2127. 2128. 2129. 2130. 2131. 2132. 2133. 2134. 2135. 2136. 2137. 2138. 2139. 2140. 2141. 2142. 2143. 2144. 2145. 2146. 2147. 2148. 2149. 2150. 2151. 2152. 2153. 2154. 2155. 2156. 2157. 2158. 2159. 2160. 2161. 2162. 2163. 2164. 2165. 2166. 2167. 2168. 2169. 2170. 2171. 2172. 2173. 2174. 2175. 2176. 2177. 2178. 2179. 2180. 2181. 2182. 2183. 2184. 2185. 2186. 2187. 2188. 2189. 2190. 2191. 2192. 2193. 2194. 2195. 2196. 2197. 2198. 2199. 2200. 2201. 2202. 2203. 2204. 2205. 2206. 2207. 2208. 2209. 2210. 2211. 2212. 2213. 2214. 2215. 2216. 2217. 2218. 2219. 2220. 2221. 2222. 2223. 2224. 2225. 2226. 2227. 2228. 2229. 2230. 2231. 2232. 2233. 2234. 2235. 2236. 2237. 2238. 2239. 2240. 2241. 2242. 2243. 2244. 2245. 2246. 2247. 2248. 2249. 2250. 2251. 2252. 2253. 2254. 2255. 2256. 2257. 2258. 2259. 2260. 2261. 2262. 2263. 2264. 2265. 2266. 2267. 2268. 2269. 2270. 2271. 2272. 2273. 2274. 2275. 2276. 2277. 2278. 2279. 2280. 2281. 2282. 2283. 2284. 2285. 2286. 2287. 2288. 2289. 2290. 2291. 2292. 2293. 2294. 2295. 2296. 2297. 2298. 2299. 2300. 2301. 2302. 2303. 2304. 2305. 2306. 2307. 2308. 2309. 2310. 2311. 2312. 2313. 2314. 2315. 2316. 2317. 2318. 2319. 2320. 2321. 2322. 2323. 2324. 2325. 2326. 2327. 2328. 2329. 2330. 2331. 2332. 2333. 2334. 2335. 2336. 2337. 2338. 2339. 2340. 2341. 2342. 2343. 2344. 2345. 2346. 2347. 2348. 2349. 2350. 2351. 2352. 2353. 2354. 2355. 2356. 2357. 2358. 2359. 2360. 2361. 2362. 2363. 2364. 2365. 2366. 2367. 2368. 2369. 2370. 2371. 2372. 2373. 2374. 2375. 2376. 2377. 2378. 2379. 2380. 2381. 2382. 2383. 2384. 2385. 2386. 2387. 2388. 2389. 2390. 2391. 2392. 2393. 2394. 2395. 2396. 2397. 2398. 2399. 2400. 2401. 2402. 2403. 2404. 2405. 2406. 2407. 2408. 2409. 2410. 2411. 2412. 2413. 2414. 2415. 2416. 2417. 2418. 2419. 2420. 2421. 2422. 2423. 2424. 2425. 2426. 2427. 2428. 2429. 2430. 2431. 2432. 2433. 2434. 2435. 2436. 2437. 2438. 2439. 2440. 2441. 2442. 2443. 2444. 2445. 2446. 2447. 2448. 2449. 2450. 2451. 2452. 2453. 2454. 2455. 2456. 2457. 2458. 2459. 2460. 2461. 2462. 2463. 2464. 2465. 2466. 2467. 2468. 2469. 2470. 2471. 2472. 2473. 2474. 2475. 2476. 2477. 2478. 2479. 2480. 2481. 2482. 2483. 2484. 2485. 2486. 2487. 2488. 2489. 2490. 2491. 2492. 2493. 2494. 2495. 2496. 2497. 2498. 2499. 2500. 2501. 2502. 2503. 2504. 2505. 2506. 2507. 2508. 2509. 2510. 2511. 2512. 2513. 2514. 2515. 2516. 2517. 2518. 2519. 2520. 2521. 2522. 2523. 2524. 2525. 2526. 2527. 2528. 2529. 2530. 2531. 2532. 2533. 2534. 2535. 2536. 2537. 2538. 2539. 2540. 2541. 2542. 2543. 2544. 2545. 2546. 2547. 2548. 2549. 2550. 2551. 2552. 2553. 2554. 2555. 2556. 2557. 2558. 2559. 2560. 2561. 2562. 2563. 2564. 2565. 2566. 2567. 2568. 2569. 2570. 2571. 2572. 2573. 2574. 2575. 2576. 2577. 2578. 2579. 2580. 2581. 2582. 2583. 2584. 2585. 2586. 2587. 2588. 2589. 2590. 2591. 2592. 2593. 2594. 2595. 2596. 2597. 2598. 2599. 2600. 2601. 2602. 2603. 2604. 2605. 2606. 2607. 2608. 2609. 2610. 2611. 2612. 2613. 2614. 2615. 2616. 2617. 2618. 2619. 2620. 2621. 26

and one of the privy-council.

some judge in spiritual and temporal

gained : having not to receive Israel

...from the Almighty, and being a

...the world's...

nonetheless, that our zeal for reform is

appear, do strictly charge and command all of

offices, and other officers in all parts where

ver, that they observe and record that is con-

under the auspices of the Department of the Interior.

Importance. In regard we have been informed.

the great chest and entrance by which

BY THE MIGHTY

OLD FATHER TIME,

PROCLAMATION.

WE, the mighty Old Father Time, the most knowing master in the world, universal heir to all mankind, sovereign lord of all things, death's champion, and one of her privy council; supreme judge in spirituals and temporals, and general overseer of the universe; having our commission from the Almighty, and being accordingly informed of very many great and intolerable abuses committed in this worldly commonwealth, that our zeal for reformation may appear, do strictly charge and command all our justices, and other officers in all parts whatsoever, that they observe and see all that is contained in this our proclamation be observed, under the penalties herein mentioned.

Imprimis, In regard we have been informed of the great cheats and extortions by innkeepers,

we do ordain then, for the future, their houses be not called inns, but exchanges of thieves, because their trade is rather robbing than selling, upon pain of his being obliged to make use of them, who shall be found guilty of the contrary.

Item, Being informed that there is a sort of sponging eleemosynary travellers, who lie at friends houses longer than they ought to do, it is our will that the first day they be made welcome, received with a pleasant countenance, and lovingly entertained; the second day they shall be treated after an indifferent manner, and the third with neglect and uneasiness, looking upon them no longer as friends, but enemies to the house and estate. And we order all who feed upon the public to be banished our commonwealth.

Item. Perceiving that generally barbers have a natural inclination to fiddling and scraping, we direct, that, instead of a long pole and bason, their sign be one, or several fiddles, according to the barber's stock or ability. And in regard that they throw away men's beards into the dirt, they being a thing of respect and honour, it is our will, that, for the time to come, they preserve them to make brushes to clean pictures and their own looking glasses. That consider-

ing every time they trim, a man looks ten years younger than he did before, which is like flattery in painting; therefore, for the future, they shall not be called barbers but painters.

Item, For as much as all painters are naturally flatterers, and make it their business to mend all the faults of nature, and perceiving they cannot do the same kindness to their own sons and daughters, who are seldom handsome; we do require, that hereafter, since they can give no satisfactory reason for so doing, they paint the ladies as they really are, and not with their hands on their breasts, as if they were swearing by their honour the picture was well done, nor in strange wild habits, and so loose, as if they were in readiness to go to bed with the first man that comes in, and had all their breasts exposed to invite him to it. And if they fail hereof, we do ordain that they be called sycophants and flatterers, and that the owner does not like the picture.

Item, Observing the various sects and multitude of poets, it has pleased God to permit to over-run the world, as a punishment of our sins, It is our will that those that are to be worn out, the time allowed for spending them be two years; and if any shall remain after that time, since all human means fail, they shall be laid by

charms and spells, as they do the devil. We do farther declare all those poets heathens and infidels, who disguise themselves and their ladies under Pagan names, as Diana, Daphne, Coridon, &c.

Item, In regard that astrologers, poets, and rhetoricians have a conceit that they alone are masters of figures, with which they conceal and palliate their cheats, We do declare that all those shall be looked upon as scurvy figures, who take off their hats to nobody, especially if it proceed from pride; those who speak ill of every thing; those who, to be thought contemplative, designedly speak from the purpose, though they do it with premeditation; those who have no estate, and yet boast of their extravagancies; those who in dirty weather pick the stones, and salute all the women they meet, though they be old and ugly; those who would be thought to pray all the morning, and pick their teeth in the afternoon; all old men that endeavour to look young, and gallant women; and do require that these last be not permitted to go abroad without tutors, since, notwithstanding their age, they would make themselves children. We also include in this number all women who are either handsome, or old, and yet paint, and all widows that are ever talking of

their late husbands, only to inveigle new ones; as also those women, who, when they are in a coach, do not take notice of their most familiar acquaintance, that so they may be the more taken notice of themselves.

Item, Observing the pride and vanity of valets de chambre and footmen, grown saucy by the encouragement they have from their masters, and accordingly mimicking the gentlemen, by running in debt, wearing watches in their pockets, powdering their wigs, and talking of races, dogs, and whores, We do ordain that they be called gentlemen scoundrels, or knights panders, and that they be obliged to lie with the horses or dogs upon straw, or on louzy flock beds, in the stews where the profession is.

Item, Observing the ceremonious submissive impertinency of some persons in bowing and cringing, beyond the bounds of civility and courtesy, We do ordain, that it be looked upon as want of breeding and good manners; and if they do not amend it, that they be for ever obliged to continue bowing and crooked, like the devil that broke his back with carrying tailors to hell, and that their breeches fall down when they are in most company.

Item, We make it known to all kings and princes in the world, that they must not think

themselves the greatest because men are uncovered before them, for the heat is much greater to which they stand bare and uncovered themselves.

Item, For as much as we have observed that there are abundance of tricks and contrivances in relation to giving and begging, for the better relief of purses, and that there may be an easy answer to all sharpening and begging women, We declare, that for the future none shall give any thing but the time of the day, good night and good morrow, a hand to a woman that falls, precedence to superiors in all places, and good words to all people. We farther direct, that no man presume to give gowns and petticoats, upon pain of being reputed an ass; but may be allowed to give as many promises as he pleases, never to be performed, and that he give all impudent jades to the devil who beg treats and entertainments. And if a man be compelled to give any thing, let it be a little at a time and often, as physicians advise people to drink, for so it will last the longer, and every gift is a fresh obligation. And it is our will, that all those who shall not fulfil these our commands be for ever poor and in love, and have neither money nor mistress.

Item, Being sensible that the world swarms

with a sort of impudent, shameless and impertinent men of business, We direct, that they be excluded all offices and employments, that only some few of them be admitted to be clerks and beadles of parishes, and the rest be distributed about the country to instruct bashful wenches, and backward school-boys; and that as many as remain be bestowed among the oyster and herb-women, and for their punishment instead of executioners, that they be delivered up to be tormented by fools that have a conceit of their own wit.

Item, We declare all tradesmen madmen, who make any account of great men's promises of payment; and those great men to be reputed under the same capacity, who value not what price they buy at, reckoning how long it will be before they pay, when they ought to consider there is no term so long but comes at last, and that always too soon, when they are obliged to part with the money, and then they all look like fools.

Item, In regard of the many murders, and other mischiefs, daily committed by physicians, surgeons, apothecaries, babblers, Sir Possitives and Ignoramuses, We do here declare them mortal enemies to the lives and reputations of man-

kind, as we do lawyers, attorneys, jilts, and pick-pockets to their purses.

Item, Being satisfied there is a generation of slaughtering bullies, who kill none but such as suffer themselves to be killed, it is our will, that none be called bravoës, but such as are, or pretend to be, descended from physicians, surgeons, and apothecaries.

Item, Considering the many irregularities committed among those women, who by reason of their age might be called mothers, We do require, that whensoever any that is above thirty-eight years of age shall not laugh, where there is occasion, it shall not be attributed to want of sense or satisfaction, but of teeth; and therefore for concealing of this defect, whensoever they have an inclination to grin, they may be allowed to hold their fan or their muff before their mouth. And this and no other formality shall be allowed to any above the age of twenty-five.

Item, Calling to mind the many extravagancies of leud men, We do forbid all persons calling any thing pinked which is torn, or taking pet at what flanders by say, because they lose at play; or being positive in any matter of no moment, upon pain of being brought into much trouble and danger. It shall therefore be an

irrevocable law, that no man take pet at any time, or for any cause whatsoever. It is also our will, that no man give the title of fasting or abstemiousness to that which is really want of meat and necessary hunger. And whereas it is a common saying, that heats and colds, troubles and surfeits, destroy most people, We declare, that though it is true, heats and colds bring some to their end, and some few may come to it by sorrows; yet that empty bellies bring more to the grave, than all of them together.

Item, In regard that troubles have complained to us that all gray hairs have been laid to their charge, We declare, that they are wronged, and those are only the effect of age, and so we command all persons to own.

Item, Reflecting on the infinite multitude of madams there are now adays, which title has been usurped by all sorts of women, from the palace to the oyster-hall, We do ordain, that the said title be turned out of all houses of credit and reputation, and condemned to herb-women, chandlers, hawkers, whores, and bawds.

Item, For as much as there is a great scarcity of true friends, in regard there are only friends where there is no need, all words and nothing of sincerity, We direct, that, for the future, all

friends be as well known as money, whose value is tried before it comes to be used.

Item, Perceiving how much every gallant values every thing that drops from his mistress, that he may take and keep it as a favour, We declare, that what drops in public is no favour, but a slight that he may buy her better; and therefore he may as well take to himself what she drops in private, which, though not so sweet, is less costly.

We farther ordain, that no woman wear silk upon silk, nor one husband upon another; and that some women passing for maids, do not impose upon the world what really is not.

And for a comfort to the slaves in the galleys and mines, We declare, that they are no greater slaves than husbands that have bad wives.

Item, Being satisfied that cuckoldom is become a matter of honour and profit, and that many mischiefs happen in the world, because they who are so know not how to manage it, We do therefore ordain, that they be incorporated into a company, and none admitted to it without being examined and approved of, though he be an alderman or a seaman.

We also declare all patient husbands incapable of making a will, and think not fit they who

had none of their own when living, should be allowed it when they are dead.

We farther forbid all men that have no teeth, marrying, especially old or lean women; for women now-a-days are so loose and impudent, that they scarce value men that show their teeth; and as a wife is old or lean, a toothless husband will have enough to do to gnaw her.

Item, In regard it is requisite to comfort the husbands, and say something in behalf of the women, We declare, that the latter give the former three good days, or nights, which are the wedding night, the first time they are delivered, and when they die. And in answer to foul mouthed railers, who call women liars, We declare, they speak truth three times in their lives; the first when they say, this head of mine makes me distracted; the second, when the husband in bed bidding them turn this way, they reply, I have nothing else to think on, I'll warrant you; and the last, when they cannot eat at table because they have crammed themselves in private, and say, I shall never have much stomach as long as this course of life lasts.

We farther ordain, that whosoever shall happen to kill a bailiff's follower, or an informer, which is no better than an apple-woman's cur,

a jailor's tool, an useless piece of lumber in the commonwealth, and the devil's instrument, or any other officer belonging to the evidencing trade, may be allowed to slay him, and carry about the skin among all persons who are in law, that every one may give him a reward.

Item, For as much as we are sensible there is a sort of lawyers, who, like common strumpets, admit of every client, especially if he is but eager and passionate, and put interpretations, and make additions to the laws according to the crowns they receive, so inverting their true sense and meaning, We do ordain, that they be looked upon as hackney interpreters, and men that plead for the increase of controversies, and not for their clients; and we declare those countries happy which have none such, as those seas may be called pacific where there are no pirates. And in regard that the senseless multitude thinks all learning and wisdom consists in old age, and grizly long beards, we direct all scholars, before they go to the universities, to turn hermits for some years to enhance their stock of beards, and absolutely forbid their coming near the barber's, lest they happen unluckily to take off their knowledge in their beards.

We farther declare all those to be void of

sense and reason, who otherwise being well enough qualified, take a pride in being unmannerly, and incur the hatred of all men for refusing the civility of the hat, as if pride and ill nature were the only ingredients for making a man great.

Item, It is our will and pleasure, that those who make a practice of calling every man Tom and Jack, though he be never so grave a person, or very much above them, be obliged to make full restitution to all they have robbed of their just titles and honours, and be themselves ever reputed incapable of any more respect than what they have shown to others.

To conclude, In regard that abundance of poets are unhealthy, and in a dangerous condition, by the overswelling of their veins, We ordain, that all surgeons take care in time to let them blood, and that they do it with fleams, as horses are served, for fear of spoiling their lancets, and incurring our high displeasure.

All which laws and ordinances we do enjoin our justices to see strictly observed, as is usual in other cases.

By order of the invisible council,

ODIOUS TELLTRUTH, *Secretary.*

TREATISE

OF

All THINGS whatsoever, and many more.

By the most Learned and most Expert,

DR. WISEACRE.

*Dedicated to the Company of Busy-Bodies, and the Society of
Babblers, and the Tribe of Old Impertinences.*

CHAP. I.

Containing many wonderful, unaccountable, and prodigious
Secrets, which can never fail.

ADVERTISEMENT.

Curious or slovenly reader, for either may
serve to the business in hand, I first give them
the strange and stupendous propositions, where
you may pitch upon the wonder you have a
mind to perform, and observing what number
it has before, seek the same in the solutions,

where you will find the method of performing. Be not discouraged at the difficulty you find in the proposition, for the solution will make it as easy as pissing abed.

PROPOSITIONS.

1. To oblige all handsome women to follow you if you are a man, and the rich gallants if you are a woman.
2. To be sure of a good reception wherever you go, and it is infallible.
3. To make the woman you like run after you wheresoever you go, though you have never seen her but once in your life.
4. That men and women may grant all you ask of them.
5. To be rich and possess much money.
6. To come at any woman without ever failing.
7. That no clothes you have may ever wear out.
8. That no hawk may fly away from you, though you turn him loose.
9. That you may never be troubled with the toothach.
10. That you may never grow gray or old.
11. How a barren woman may have children.

12. To prevent tailors stealing your cloth or stuff.

13. That you may never die.

14. That you may not die without somebody to pray by you.

15. To be speedily advanced to high posts and places.

16. To be in great esteem.

17. To prevent growing old.

18. To prevent discovering a bald pate, though you have never a hair on it, without wearing a wig.

19. That you may be successful in all law-suits.

20. That you may never lie long sick.

21. That the bugs may not bite you at night.

22. To be beloved by all men.

23. To prevent confessing on the rack, do not discover it to thieves and murderers.

24. To shake off all bolts and irons in prisons, though never so secure.

SOLUTIONS.

1. Be sure always to keep before them when they are going.

2. Give something in every place, and you will find so good a reception that you will have cause to repent.

3. Steal what she has, and she will pursue you to the end of the world.

4. Desire the women to take all you have, and the men to give you nothing, and they will all grant it.

5. If you have money, keep it; and if you have not, do not covet it, and you will be rich enough.

6. If she walks, put on; if she puts on, run; if she runs, fly; and you will soon come at her.

7. Tear them to rags yourself, and they will not wear.

8. Pull all his feathers, and he'll not fly a jot.

9. Draw them all, though it be no ornament to the jaws.

10. Die when you are young or new born.

11. Let her conceive and bring forth, and breed them up.

12. Let them make no clothes for you, for that is the only remedy.

13. Be not a fool, for only they die; unfortunate men are killed by the sword, sick men by their physicians, and fools die of their own accord.

14. Commit some heinous crime, and at the gallows you will not want somebody to pray by you.

15. Get upon the Alps or Pyrenean mountains.

16. Get much money, live high, and treat all that come near you.

17. Keep always in the sun in summer, and in the wet in winter; never give yourself rest, fret at every thing that happens, eat your meat cold, and drink water, meddle in every body's business, for this is the sure way never to come to be old.

18. Wear your hat eternally, do not take it off to go to bed; if another takes off his to you, requite him with a nod or bow; and if any body says you are unmannerly, tell them it is better to be so than bald. And if any one should quarrel with you because you are not civil, and should happen to kill you, it is better still to be dead than bald; and take care to die with your hat on, as Julius Cæsar did to cover his head when they murdered him.

19. Never pay your counsellor, nor your solicitor, nor any fees of the court, for all that money is certainly lost, and it is a daily charge upon you. And if you pay them and gain your cause, still your money is gone; and if you are cast, still worse. And take notice, that before you go to law, the controversy is, whether the money is yours or anothers; but when once the

suit is begun, the contrivance is, that it be neither yours nor the others, but theirs who pretend to defend you both.

20. Send for your physician when you are well, and give him money, because you are not sick; for if you give it him when you are ill, how can you expect he should give you health, which he gets nothing by, and remove the distemper he lives by.

21. Sit up all night, and go to bed by day.

22. Lend and never be paid, present, treat, bear, endure, do good turns, hold your peace, and suffer yourself to be cheated.

23. Deny all that is laid to your charge.

24. Pay the jailor and they will all drop off.

CHAP. II.

Divination and Astrology.

MUCH rain is a certain sign of wet weather.

Coughing, rheums, and pains in the teeth, betoken a cold.

The Moon in *Pisces*, signifies she has a fifth dinner, she will decrease, and the lanterns will be carried about at night.

Whensoever the Moon is in *Taurus*, there is

no doubt but they will have four horns betwixt them, and the sun will rise in the morning.

The old moons make bad winter nights, and then the winds make a noise if they blow hard.

Jupiter in *Libra*, looks like a grocer at his scales, and denotes there will be summer and winter that year.

Jupiter in *Aries*, denotes melancholy in all that cannot be merry.

Venus in *Gemini*, portends that whores will not be satisfied with one.

Saturn in *Capricorn*, threatens the heads of husbands who have lewd wives.

Mercury in *Leo*, will not be unlike one that shows wild beasts, foreshows distempers in those that eat abundance of melons and cucumbers, and drink water of them, and that the sick will die, if the physician take them in hand.

The Moon in the *Dragon's Head*, signifies the dragon has a head.

The full moon signifies that she can hold no more; and this is a certain rule.

An eclipse of the sun is the noblest eclipse, denotes it will be darkened whilst it lasts, and that astrologers will tell abundance of lies, which fools will believe, and mighty men will dread.

A blazing star with a long tail looks like quality, and foretels abundance of people of all

suit is begun, the contrivance is, that it be neither yours nor the others, but theirs who pretend to defend you both.

20. Send for your physician when you are well, and give him money, because you are not sick; for if you give it him when you are ill, how can you expect he should give you health, which he gets nothing by, and remove the distemper he lives by.

21. Sit up all night, and go to bed by day.

22. Lend and never be paid, present, treat, bear, endure, do good turns, hold your peace, and suffer yourself to be cheated.

23. Deny all that is laid to your charge.

24. Pay the jailor and they will all drop off.

CHAP. II.

Divination and Astrology.

MUCH rain is a certain sign of wet weather.

Coughing, rheums, and pains in the teeth, betoken a cold.

The Moon in *Pisces*, signifies she has a fish dinner, she will decrease, and the lanthorns will be carried about at night.

Whensoever the Moon is in *Taurus*, there is

no doubt but they will have four horns betwixt them, and the sun will rise in the morning.

The old moons make bad winter nights, and then the winds make a noise if they blow hard.

Jupiter in *Libra*, looks like a grocer at his scales, and denotes there will be summer and winter that year.

Jupiter in *Aries*, denotes melancholy in all that cannot be merry.

Venus in *Gemini*, portends that whores will not be satisfied with one.

Saturn in *Capricorn*, threatens the heads of husbands who have lewd wives.

Mercury in *Leo*, will not be unlike one that shows wild beasts, foreshows distempers in those that eat abundance of melons and cucumbers, and drink water of them, and that the sick will die, if the physician take them in hand.

The Moon in the *Dragon's Head*, signifies the dragon has a head.

The full moon signifies that she can hold no more; and this is a certain rule.

An eclipse of the sun is the noblest eclipse, denotes it will be darkened whilst it lasts, and that astrologers will tell abundance of lies, which fools will believe, and mighty men will dread.

A blazing star with a long tail looks like quality, and foretels abundance of people of all

forts will be gazing at it ; and if it be fiery, all the princes will die that year who cannot live till the next.

A great conjunction is a certain sign that many kings will meet, and some be taken at cards. Many great men, as well as little ones, will contrive conjunctions with females, and some of them will obstruct them. Ptolemy, Origanus, Albumazor, &c.

CHAP. III.

Of Omens.

If you are going to buy any thing, and when you should pay for it, cannot find your purse, it is the worst omen that can happen, and unlucky for your marketing.

If you are going to fight, and drop your sword, it is much better than if your nose had dropped off ; but if it happen to drop when you are fighting, and your head is broken, the omen is bad for you, but good for the surgeon.

If you happen to see crows fly across you when you go abroad, let them fly, and take heed where you set your feet.

Tuesday is an unlucky day for those who travel afoot without money, and for those who are cast into gaol.

If you happen to spill the salt, to prevent the ill omen, take it up and eat a dinner; or if you will not, rise presently from table, and eat nothing that day, which is the way to verify the omen, for it is no small misfortune to fast.

All those are unlucky days and unfortunate hours to them on which the constable seizes a criminal, the bailiff arrests a debtor, the gamester draws in a culley, the great man discovers a flatterer, and a whore ensnares a young man.

Three of the best things in the world are very odious to three sorts of people; health to physicians, peace to soldiers, and sincerity to lawyers.

CHAP. IV.

How Things are to be done, and on what Days, that they may prove Fortunate.

SUNDAY the sun rules; it is a good day to sponge a dinner, and it does no harm though it be somewhat better than ordinary; for, according to Galen and Hippocrates, surfeits that cost nothing are not dangerous; and the sun is in his own house, and you in another man's.

On Monday buy all that you can meet with

at an under-rate, or good, or take what is to be had for nothing.

On Tuesday receive all that is given you, without once excusing yourself or drawing back, for it is Mars's day, and he will look upon you with an ill aspect, if you should refuse the first proffer, and not have a second.

On Wednesday ask of every body you meet, and perhaps Mercury may give some one vanity enough to grant you something.

Thursday is a good day to believe nothing that flatterers say.

Friday is a proper day to shun a creditor, or an arrest, or any that would sponge a dinner.

Saturday is as convenient a day as any to lie abed long in a morning, to walk at your ease, to eat a hot dinner, to talk at pleasure, to wear good clothes and easy shoes, because Saturn is old and loves his ease.

CHAP. V.

Of Physiognomy.

WHOSOEVER has frizly black hard hair, will put the barber to more trouble; and he who breeds lice will scratch his head often.

He that is bald will have no hair; and if he

happens to have any, it will not be on the bald place. If these men wear beards, their heads shine, and their faces look like hairy heads, and their heads like beardless faces.

He who has a low forehead, and full of wrinkles, will look like a monkey, and be ridiculous to all that behold him.

He who has a high forehead, will have his eyes under it, and will live all the days of his life, and this is infallible.

Those who have little diminutive noses sunk in their heads, so that ill scents can scarce find them out, are men, though they look like something else, and begin to be death's-heads whilst they are living. They are seldom choleric, because they can scarce find their noses to take snuff.

A great mouth from ear to ear, signifies much foam and no bridle, and these are not hard-mouthed, but all mouth.

A little mouth drawn up like a purse, or a snout, denotes darkness within, and looks more like a loop-hole than a window.

A watery mouth that is all foam when hot, sputters when it speaks, and overflows when it laughs, will have need of a flabbering-bib.

He who has great hands will have large fingers,

and ten nails on them and the thumbs, and if he strikes hard it will fall heavy.

Sparkling eyes, have no ill scent, and shine.

Green and blue eyes look more like birds than women.

No woman that has good eyes, a good mouth, and good hands, can never be handsome, or avoid being a scarecrow; for if once she values herself upon her eyes, she does so ogle, cast such languishing looks, gaze about, and dart such glances, that the devil himself cannot endure her: If she has fine hands, she is ever beating time to all she says, righting her dress, and playing with her fingers, till she will put a dead man out of patience. Then, if she has curious teeth, her lips are ever tucked up, she laughs, she grins, she yawns, and is continually like a snarling dog, or the picture of a soul in hell. So that you will find, that a mouth like a purse, blear eyes, and clumsy hands, much better, as contented with the uses they were made for.

A woman that has a face like a hotchpoe, with a swine's snout, coarse flesh, as it were beef, and all other suitable features, and valuing herself upon her fine dress, pretending to beauty that is only purchased at the shops, deserves to be hung up for a sign, or to be condemned to

an eternal mask, never to be taken off, for fear of disgracing her dress.

A lanthorn-jawed woman, with a hatchet-face, sunk eyes, a hook nose, paper lips, leather cheeks, dark gums, straggling teeth, and such a low forehead, that her hair serves instead of eyebrows, if she happen to correct all these living enormities by her wit, when she begs may have a hearing given her, but no money, and she may be allowed to take her degree in the university, but not to have a lover. Let her words and wit be commended, but not her shape or face; give her a place in libraries, but none in your affections; let her be heard at any time, but never looked at.

There is a sort of concealed old women now in fashion, who have all the effects of age upon them, and give out, that they lost their teeth by a defluction, that their wrinkles belong to the family, and their gray-hairs came with troubles and sickness. These are fit to be made house-keepers, or nurses, for then it will be no shame for them to be old, and they will not suffer the very girls to be young, which will be some revenge, though they are past redress.

Women that have curious eyebrows, in all likelihood will have eyelashes under them, and

will be beloved if any body takes a liking to them.

Whensoever you see a man that has but one eye, you may certainly conclude he has lost the other.

Those who squint will put others to much trouble to decide which way they look.

Left-handed men are very ignorant, for it seems they do not know their right hand from their left, since the one has the office, and the other the place; they are ill-contrived people, for they never do any thing the right way.

Never have any thing to do with a crooked man; but conclude he is of an ill inclination, and can never be upright, as long as he goes bowing.

An eunuch, who is neither man nor woman, and yet looks like both, is not to be endured, as being of the doubtful gender, and never to be relied on.

They that have small feet, will need but little shoes, and will have a light pair of heels.

CHAP. VI.

Of Chiromancy, or Predicting by the Lines in the Hands.
A short Chapter.

CURIOUS READER.

ALL the lines you see in the hands, signify that the hand bows that way and not backwards, and that it doubles the joints; and therefore the great ones are in the joints, and the skin being thin, the other small ones are made by the gathering of it: And to convince you of this truth, you may observe, that there are lines on the neck, the forehead, the lips, the hams, the elbows, and the bottom of the buttocks, where the skin gathers; and therefore if these observations were true, as there is chiromancy, there ought to be frontimancy, collimancy, pedimancy, nitimancy, &c.

CHAP. VII.

How to learn all Arts and Sciences in one Day.

If you desire to be master of all languages, speak them among such as do not understand them. *Probatum.*

If you would be a Welchman, change all *b*'s into *p*'s, and the *d*'s into *t*'s, and the work is done; as for *blood*, say *plood*; for *blue*, say *plue*, &c.

To be an Irishman, say *Arra dear joy*, and *be me shoul*, and change *wh* into *f*; as for *what*, say *fat*; for *when*, *fen*, &c.

To be a Scotsman, turn *e* into *a*, *i* into *e*, and *o* into *a*, as for *where*, say *whare*; for *die*, say *dee*; for *soul*, say *saul*; speak very broad, and never stick at bawdy, and that is enough.

To be an Italian, turn *o* into *cb*, and *ch* into *k*; say *pian piano*, and *cazzo en culo*, &c.

To be a Frenchman, swear begar, *jerney blew*, for *me* say *I*, and put all your accents on the last syllables, and you need no more.

Dutch is as easy as the rest; for it only requires saying *dis* for *this*, *dat* for *that*, *turd* for *third*, and then swearing *sacramenten*, and calling upon *ten hundred thousand ton of devils*, and the work is over.

As for cant and gibberish, every schoolboy and rogue is master of them. Latin is always taken for granted, Greek, Hebrew, and the Oriental languages are so little known, that it is but saying you speak them, and few will question it.

If you would be a famous physician, keep a

chariot with a pair of old horses, wear a great stone ring, a black coat, and a wig that is neither long nor short, without powder; and though you cannot read, you will be as absolute a physician as Galen or Hippocrates; but if you walk on foot, you will never rise to the degree of a quack; for the main knowledge lies in the horses. When you come into a house be always in haste, feel the pulse and look grave: Then ask, "Was he feverish?" If they say he was, answer, "I thought as much." Next, "Did the fit last long?" If they say it did, tell them, "It plainly appears." If he has no stomach, charge him not to eat any thing that is gross; but let him drink ptysan, order a clyster; if he says he cannot take it, say, "It is as much as his life is worth;" write half a score receipts, that the apothecary may sell his trash, and be your friend, and that the patient may be sicker. If this does not do, bleed him, then blister him from head to foot: If he dies not presently, repeat it till he does, and then tell them his hour was come; it was a malignant distemper; there is no opposing the will of God; you have done all that art could devise; and the heir will take it all for granted, and allow you double fees. If by chance the patient recovers, let him know his case was desperate, but that you had a nos-

trum which saved his life; that it has cost you many years study; that it is a most sovereign remedy, and little of it to be had. If you happen to cast the water, be sure to shake it well, look into it narrowly, make faces, and shake your head at it. Then though the patient be only troubled with chilblains, bid him make his peace with God, and settle his affairs, so you gain reputation if he lives, and are thought to have foretold it if you kill him. To gain the credit of being employed by great men, make always some excuse to stop at their doors, and go in, though it be but to ask an impertinent question. Get some of your trusty friends to call you up late at night, crying out in the street, that all the neighbourhood may hear, "Sir, The duke has sent for you in all haste. Quickly, Sir, my lady marchioness is like to die. Make haste, Sir, the bishop is fallen into a fit." Thus will you gain esteem, become a doctor of fame, and have power of life and death over all that believe you.

If you would be a great person, though you sprung out of a dunghill, be very ignorant, write that nobody can read it, talk much, though it be nonsense, run deep in debt, and pay nobody, be very lewd and profane, and keep where you are not known, and the work is done.

If you would be a lawyer, to ruin all causes but your own, always take care to talk of Coke and Littleton, get two or three cases by heart, and apply them right and wrong. When any man tells you his case, say the law is plain on his side, it is impossible to hurt him. When you plead, talk much, and very loud, and stand stiffly to what you say, though it be nothing to the purpose, for in law the most said is best, and though the judges should not approve of it, your client will, if he sees you roar till you sweat and are hoarse. Assure every man his cause is good and just, though it be an open cheat and forgery, or downright nonsense; and be assured there is no folly or wickedness in the world but has some law on its side; for what can be more absurd, than not to drink wine or eat bacon, and yet the law of Mahomet forbids it. If you do not understand one word of your client's case, yet tell him, you take him, you have pleaded the like twenty times. Upon occasion you may quote statutes at random, and adjudged cases out of any, though they never were writ. But be sure you have a study well stored with large folios, though they be nothing but old romances, or some cast pleadings, which you may have cheap at the grocers. If ever you happen to be gravelled for an author, say

you met with the like case at the assizes in any country at a great distance, and be sure to wear a very dirty ragged gown, and to be always in a hurry.

If you would be a chemist, and make gold of stones, herbs, and dirt, turn apothecary, and you will turn all the trash you sell into gold; and take heed of dissolving of metals, and extracting of their virtues; for by that means you will sooner turn gold into dirt, than dirt into gold. Take my word for it, the only way to make gold, is to trade; so you see the mercer makes gold of silk, the chandler of mops and brooms, the bookseller of paper, and the baker of bread, the surgeon of blood and wounds, and the physician of the excrements.

If you would be a Hector, though you have no more heart than a hen, bridle up your hat round close to the crown, wear dirty linen, bind the pommel of your sword before you, talk hoarse, strut and stare, wear little whiskers, keep your skull hot with brandy, swear, curse, blaspheme, talk bawdy, for these are the qualifications that make a man brave. Speak of nothing but quarrels and encounters you have been in, and of the wounds you have received. When swords are drawn be very sedate, and very hasty and passionate when none appear;

play the fury in jest, and take notice of nothing that is said in earnest. When any man is hurt afar off, drop a few words, as if you had done it, and drink to the memory of all the bullies deceased, and by this means you will be dreaded as much as a pestilential fever.

L E T T E R

GIVING

An Account of the AUTHOR's Journey into
Andalusia with the King.

I HAD a fall, but Lucifer had a greater; my feet need no great help to stumble, for my legs naturally stammer, and I have a hitch in my pace. The admiral's coach overturned, we were six of us in it, and Don Henrique Henriquez broke his head. I got out at the garret window, one tugging at me by the jaws, whilst another cried, "Don Francisco give me your hand;" and I answered, "Don, what is your name, give me your foot." I got out of the coach, as if I had rose out of my grave, and found the clumsy coachman swearing, he never did the like in his life. I told him, "You have overturned us as cleverly, as if you had done it an hundred times." We came to Aranjuez, and that night Don Henrique and I lay upon

two wafers instead of quilts, without pillows. I slept as if I had been in the stocks, and dreamed of a bed, for that was all I could do. This is the way of living you would have news of, and wants nothing to make it wretched, since it wants your good table; but all troubles and sufferings are less in an admiral's company. His majesty is so hardy, that he is almost every day on horseback, and neither snow nor hail puts him by it. The common council of Tembleque entertained his majesty with a bull-feast, where many showed their courage at the sport, and some their skill. Boniface looked on, and was concerned at nothing. There were fireworks which succeeded well. His majesty shot a bull, whom all the mob could not hough. Boniface the king's jester, and the murderer of good dishes, thrust in at the admiral's table. The next day he went to Madrilejos, where Boniface again appeared amidst our dishes and cups, saying, "I am Boniface, to whom no thing comes amiss." We set out for Membrilla, and to please the magistrates of Manzanares, in complaisance to their request, his majesty passed by our estate, and every body liked the town. Thence we went down to Membrilla, where we slept by the bottle, for there was brave tossing of pots, and fox-hunting down

our throats. Hence followed quartels, and mislaying of goods. It was agreed to rise betimes, and we set out for my estate of Torre de Juan Abad, where his majesty was fain to throw down the house allotted him, that he might go to bed; it was so good, that it was better down than up. Here Sir Holdfast Sparepenny was shy of being seen by any body. It was comical to behold Don Miguel de Cardenas walking about the road, and calling out with a wisp of straw burning in his hand, like a blazing star, with a black tail. From the tower we went to Santistevan, where the earl of that name had hung out a-bundance of lights, and some fireworks run along a rope, as if they had been ropedancers, and then a bull came and singed his beard. There were pipes and waits brought from afar off, gentlemen from Ubeda and Baeza, abundance of quality standing about the hangings, plenty of belly timber, mighty presents, tents set up all about the county with wine, bread, and cheese; fellows with clear throats inviting the passengers, and begged for God's sake, saying, "Take some of the Count de Santistevan's bounty." The people easily flock to them; the skins of wine were opened, but there being a want of cups, rather than drink out of their hats, they left the wine, and with it the bread

and cheese. The earl showed his generosity, saved his liquor, made the most of the day; there was a want of beds, and coach houses to spare. Thence we went to Linares, a journey towards heaven, and the way of salvation, narrow, and full of trouble and misery.

Sir, You have cause enough to laugh at me; even take your full revenge, make out all your predictions. In the coach were Don Henry and myself, Matthew Montero, and Don Casper de Tebes. Ten mules followed; at night we came to a hill, where the people of Linares hunt; there coaches and sumpters were all stuck fast. February played all his pranks among us, it was ever a mad month, but then raved downright. There was no getting out, and we resolved to lie in the coach. The hill was all coach-houses, for the coaches were lodged, and full of wreaths of straw burning, which set fire to the olive gardens about the town. There were dismal lamentations of mule drivers; the coachmen lashed and swore, and the travellers cursed and banned. Those who were on foot lugged out their legs from the mire, without shoes or stockings, and some of them cried, "Who is that strips below there?" It looked like a short purgatory. Thus we continued four hours, talking without book, till the admi-

ral sent people to deliver us out of thralldom. We got to Linares after the admiral was in bed, and supped with what we could save from Boniface. When I went to bed, I found Boniface had stole one of my blankets, but they soon brought me another. It is comical to see Boniface at night dancing about after meat and sleep, with a candle in his hand, and asking, "Have you supped? Have you got beds?" For he has a wandering supper, is still in motion, and sharp for a bed, pinching blankets every where, insomuch, that in this country to hush their children, they cry, Boniface is coming, as in other places they call the Bulbeger. Grimaldos bears him company, and most nights takes an ambling nap in a chair, and snores like an old judge upon the bench. He dines and sups every where, and is half mad. Don Francisco Marbelli comes in a hackney tumbrel, or hei-ge-ho-a, with John de Arana and Mendoza, the half black and whole Mulatto. For my part I am careless and bedless, for I have not heard of my trunk these six days. Don Henry and I lie coupled. There are beds that hold the seven sleepers, and yet they are not safe from Boniface. It is remarkable enough to see his majesty with two Escuyes, the one a Pigmy, the other a Goliath; and to behold

Matthew Montero and me attending the funeral of our coach, and walking half a league on foot like pilgrims, he laughing to see me limp, and hear me call for oxen to draw out one of my legs that was stuck; and I bidding him, as he went down a little hill, carry his guts to his bears in his hands. We got to Andujar last night, being Friday, late in the dark, without any guide, where we continue to-day, because the river Guadalquivir is so much swelled, and shall do the same to-morrow, because we have no tidings of our sumpters and carriages. The Duke del Infantado was left behind at Linares, because his horse litter fell, and he was hurt. The Patriarch is not to be found, and they are crying of him about the bogs. I am told my shirts are safe in a slough. His majesty has put us all to it, without regarding the unseasonable weather; this is a good presage of what we may expect, and other nations fear his strong disposition. Amidst these difficulties he answers most affable to all men, gaining the affections of those subjects he has inherited from his progenitors. He is a thorough paced king, and it is a comfort to have a king that can drag us after him, and not we drag the king, and to see him lead us where he pleases. The sports of Carpio are put off, God grant they be not spoiled,

for there is no doubt but they will be noble. Boniface has spoke to Mr. Aranel about your business, and both he and I are your humble servants and brother spungers. If you will do me a singular favour, send me an answer under cover to the admiral, and lay what commands you please on me, for I am an honest man, and will do all you require. Hortensio has this day joined our company, and so we have a father confessor in case of danger, and more society to divert us. Tell Don Andrew and Don Garcia I kiss their hands. I make haste to sign, for the letter is long.

Don Francisco de Quevedo.

LETTER

FROM

DON FRANCISCO de QUEVEDO, to the Son of the DUKE de OLIVARES, Prime Minister to King Philip IV. of Spain, in which he sets down how he would have his Wife qualified.

ALL I can covet in a wife for my satisfaction and honour, and for the good of my soul, is that she be educated in your excellency's family, and grown up in your service; for if she has known how to be obedient to your excellency, it is to me a sufficient, both temporal and spiritual portion, that she has been your servant. But in case your excellency's command should be of a greater extent, in obedience to it, I will set down how I could wish that wife qualified, which God shall be pleased to bestow upon me, by means of your excellency and my lord duke. This I do rather to divert, than to inform your excellency.

As for myself, my lord, I am nothing but what my lord duke has made me ; because what I was has ruined me, and destroyed my reputation ; and if at present I am any thing, it is because I have ceased to be what I was, thanks be to God and to his excellency. I have been variously wicked, and having ceased to be so, am not yet good ; for I left wickedness, because I was tired with it, not because I was truly penitent. All the advantage of such reformation is, that it secures me from being deluded into any manner of wantonness, because I am sufficiently warned and armed against it.

I am a man of good birth in my country, as your excellency may understand ; I have a house of my own in the Mountains, and am the son of parents whose memory is honourable to me, though mine be a grievance to them.

I will ever give such an account of my fortune and age, that my fortune may afterwards be found greater than represented, and my age less.

My enemies say I am lame, whereas in truth, through a negligent mien, I appear so ; and it being dubious whether I limp or coupee, wagers may be laid whether I am lame or not lame.

As to my person, it is neither hateful nor offensive ; and as it claims no commendation, so

neither does it move such as see me to cursing or laughter.

Now I have declared who, and what manner of man I am; I will set down what sort of woman I would have her be whom God shall bestow on me. I confess, unless your excellency had commanded, it were impudence for such a fellow to prescribe what sort of a wife he would have, when no woman would be troubled with such a husband as I am.

I desire positively she should be well born, virtuous and discreet; for if a fool, she will not know how to preserve or make use of the other two qualifications, because, though a gentlewoman, I expect she will be affable, and that her virtue be such as becomes a married woman, not an anchorite, a nun, or a friar. Her husband, and the care of her family, must be to her instead of the choir and the oratory. Yet if she must be discreet with any touches of learning, I had rather she were a fool, for it is easier to bear with a woman's ignorance, than with her conceitedness.

I would neither have her deformed nor beautiful. These extremes are reconciled by an agreeable countenance; which is a medium that renders what is handsome lovely, and secures what in her appears airy. A deformed woman

is rather a scarecrow than a companion, and a beautiful one rather perplexes than delights; but if she must be either the one or the other, I had rather have her beautiful than deformed, for it is better to be in care than to be afraid, and to have a wife to guard than one to fly from.

I neither would have her rich, nor poor, but with some fortune; for neither is she to buy me, nor I her. There can be no mis of riches where there is virtue and gentility; for the man is vilely rich, who, having an estate, refuses a woman because she is poor; and he is basely poor, who, having no fortune, covets a woman because she is rich.

I had rather she was disposed to mirth than melancholy; for being tied to one another, and living always together, will breed us both trouble enough; and this grievance is in some measure eased by a sweet and cheerful nature; for to have a hypochondriac wife, always grunting in a corner like a mouse in a cheese, is to be tied to continual sorrow.

She must be well dressed to please me, not to gain the applause of others; and she must wear what is decent, not whatsoever the folly of other women shall invent. She must not do as some do, but that which all ought to do. I had ra-

ther she were covetous than prodigal, for this vice is to be dreaded, the other may prove profitable. It were a great happiness to find one that were liberal.

I do not concern myself whether she be clear or brown of complexion, or whether her hair be black or fair; only this I require, that if she be brown, she do not make herself white, for of necessity a man must rather be jealous of that cheat than in love with it.

Whether she be tall or short, it is indifferent to me, for the heels of the shoes supply the defects of stature, and, like death, make all people alike.

As to her being fat or lean, it is to be observed, that if I cannot have her interlaid, I am altogether for a lean, not a fat one; I had rather she were a skeleton, or shotten herring, than a greasy hostess, or the picture of Bacchus.

I will neither have a child, nor an old woman, which is like the cradle or the coffin; for I have long since forgot to sing lillaby, and have not yet learned to sing dirges. It is enough for me that she is a woman grown, and I shall be well pleased if she is young.

I could wish with all my heart she might have no fine hands, eyes, or mouth; for if she have these three things in perfection, it is impossible

any body should endure her, because she will tire all the world with playing with her hands that they may be seen, and rolling her eyes that they may be observed; and it is intolerable to see a woman always gaping and laughing to show her white teeth. Anxiety destroys beauty, and negligence hides faults.

I will not have one that has neither father nor mother, that I may save commemorating the dead, nor am I willing she should have all her kindred living. A father and mother I would have, because I am not superstitiously afraid of a father-in-law. As for her aunts, I shall be glad if they are in purgatory, and will allow masses to be said for them over and above.

I should bless God if she were deaf and tongue-tied, which are parts that tire company and cut off visits; and above all, should be proud she were ill-natured, for a fair conditioned woman is always harping upon the same string, and saying, that if she were like other women, and that her foolish good nature is to blame.

But the best of all were, if she would consent we might live without an old governante, or at least, if she would be satisfied we should keep half a one between us, that is, a little old woman with little headclothes and less petti-

coats, that the eyes might be delivered from the nauseousness of the governante, before they are quite off the spectre. Besides, it were most reasonable, since the governantes are the scarecrows of the antichambers, placed there to secure the forbidden fruit of the young damsels, that they should be clothed like peasants with a cap, a staff, buskins, and instead of a mourning veil, a mumping long cloak, because they are skilled in the art of begging, and that they be called by an additional name of Mumpers, as the emperors are styled Cæsars. That I may end seriously and with truth, as I began, I must tell your excellency, I shall highly prize a wife, if she be such as I wish her; and do know how to bear with her, if she be such as I deserve; for I may be unhappily married, but I cannot be an ill husband. God grant your excellency a long and happy life, and prolong the days of my lord duke, giving you that issue that is requisite to your family and grandeur. ∴

THE END.

DIRECTIONS TO THE BINDER.

The Sheets of Vols. II. and III. of the Works have been by mistake marked Vol. I. and II. The Binder is, however, desired to follow the arrangement pointed out by the *General Titles*.

THE END.